

# dialectica

International Journal of Philosophy

## *Non-Wellfoundedness*

edited by Steph Rennick and Stephan  
Leuenberger

### Contents

STEPHAN LEUENBERGER, <i>Circular Paths and Infinite Descent: A Guide</i> . . . . .	385
FREDERIQUE JANSSEN LAURET, <i>Susan Stebbing on Well-Foundedness</i> . . . . .	407
DONNCHADH O'CONNAILL & OLLEY PEARSON, <i>Infinite Regresses, Ground Conditions &amp; Metaphysical Satisfaction</i> . . . . .	439
ALEXANDRE BILBON, <i>A Recipe for Non-wellfounded but Complete Chains of Explanations (And Other Determination Relations)</i> . . . . .	459
MAŞUK ŞİMŞEK, <i>Determination Relations and Metaphysical Explanations</i> . . .	505
YANNIC KAPPES, <i>Grounding Ground and the (In-)Escapable Ill-Foundedness of the Inclusive 'Explains'</i> . . . . .	521

# dialectica

International Journal of Philosophy

Official Organ of the European Society of Analytic Philosophy

founded in 1947 by Gaston Bachelard, Paul Bernays and Ferdinand Gonseth

## Editorial Board

Jérôme Dokic, EHESS, Paris, France  
Pascal Engel, EHESS, Paris, France  
Manuel García-Carpintero, Universitat de Barcelona, Spain  
Diego Marconi, Università di Torino, Italy  
Carlos Moya, Universitat de València, Spain  
Martine Nida-Rümelin, Université de Fribourg, Switzerland  
François Recanati, Collège de France, Paris  
Marco Santambrogio, Università degli Studi di Parma, Italy  
Peter Simons, Trinity College Dublin, Ireland  
Gianfranco Soldati, Université de Fribourg, Switzerland  
Marcel Weber, Université de Genève, Switzerland

## Editors

Fabrice Correia, University of Geneva  
Philipp Blum, University of Lucerne  
Marco R. Schori, University of Bern (managing editor)

## Review Editors

Stephan Leuenberger and Philipp Blum

## Editorial Committee

Sara Amighetti, Joshua Babic, Davood Bahjat, Philipp Blum (né Keller), Claudio Calosi, Alessandro Cecconi, Zoé Christoff, Fabrice Correia, Matthias Egg, Andrea Giananti, Martin Glazier, Aleks Knoks, Arturs Logins, Jörg Löschke, Giovanni Merlo, Robert Michels, Ryan Miller, Michael Müller, Paolo Natali, Donnchadh O'Conaill, Simone Olivadoti, Edgar Phillips, Stephanie Rennick, Sebastian Schmidt, Marco R. Schori, David Schroeren, Mike Stuart, Daniel Vanello.

## Consulting Board

Johannes Brandl (Salzburg), João Branquinho (Lisboa), Elke Brendel (Bonn), Ingar Brinck (Lunds), Eros Corazza (Ikerbasque and Carleton), Josep Corbi (València), Michael Esfeld (Lausanne), Dagfinn Føllesdal (Stanford and Oslo), Frank Jackson (Australian National University Canberra), Max Kistler (Paris I), Max Kölbel (Wien), Jan Lacki (Genève), Karel Lambert (Irvine), Paolo Leonardi (Bologna), Fraser Macbride (Manchester), Josep Macià (Barcelona), Genoveva Martí (Barcelona), Élisabeth Pacherie (Institut Jean Nicod Paris), David Piñeda (Girona), Wlodek Rabinowicz (Lund), Barry Smith (Buffalo), Christine Tappolet (Montréal), Neil Tennant (Ohio State), Mark Textor (King's College London), Achille Varzi (Columbia University), Alberto Voltolini (Torino), Timothy Williamson (Oxford).

*Non-Wellfoundedness*

edited by Steph Rennick and Stephan Leuenberger

December 2023

**Contents**

STEPHAN LEUENBERGER, *Circular Paths and Infinite Descent: A Guide* . . . . . 385

FREDERIQUE JANSSEN-LAURET, *Susan Stebbing on Well-Foundedness* . . . . . 407

DONNCHADH O’CONNAILL & OLLEY PEARSON, *Infinite Regresses, Ground  
Conditions & Metaphysical Satisfaction* . . . . . 439

ALEXANDRE BILLON, *A Recipe for Non-wellfounded but Complete Chains  
of Explanations (And Other Determination Relations)* . . . . . 459

MAŞUK ŞİMŞEK, *Determination Relations and Metaphysical Explanations* . . . 505

YANNIC KAPPES, *Grounding Ground and the (In-)Escapable Ill-Foundedness  
of the Inclusive ‘Explains’* . . . . . 521

PROOF

# Circular Paths and Infinite Descent

## A Guide

STEPHAN LEUENBERGER

The contributions to this special issue offer different perspectives on the question whether reality has foundation—whether metaphysical foundationalism is true. The purpose of this introduction is to provide some background. It starts by discussing how metaphysical foundationalism might be characterised—specifically, whether it is committed to the asymmetry, transitivity, or well-foundedness of reality-structuring relations such as parthood, causation, or ground. It then summarises how the articles in the special issue relate anti-foundationalism to the following topics: the history of analytic philosophy, modal epistemology, the relationship between ground and explanation, and between grounds and metagrounds.

### 1 Introduction to the Introduction

In contemporary metaphysics, it is widely though not uniformly taken for granted that reality has foundations—that there is a fundamental level that gives rise to everything else. A comprehensive world-view is then articulated by telling a story about what the fundamental level is like. A physicalist, for example, may describe the fundamental level as consisting of particles with no further parts, or perhaps of fields. But does such a foundationalist thesis withstand scrutiny? If not, what philosophical lessons could be drawn from the failure of foundationalism? What anti-foundationalist alternatives are there for thinking about the world? These are among the questions that this special issue aims to shed new light on. The papers herein deal, among other things, with the history of anti-foundationalist thinking, the epistemology of possible infinite regresses, the connection between ground and explanation, and potential infinite regresses arising from grounding relationships themselves being grounded.

The more specific aim of this introduction is to provide some background to foundationalism and anti-foundationalism, and to situate the various contributions in the recent literature. We shall be selective in doing so. The above questions have rich and pervasive connections to issues across metaphysics and beyond, and an exhaustive catalogue is beyond the scope of this introduction.

It is customary to understand the foundationalist thesis as concerned with formal features of certain relations. The relations in question are those that impose a hierarchy on their domain, which may contain facts, objects, or events. We shall use “reality-structuring relations” as an umbrella term, with proper parthood, ground, and causation among potential candidates.<sup>1</sup> For each of these relations, and each structural feature, there is an interesting debate about whether the relation has that feature. We shall not engage in such debates but merely survey theoretical options.<sup>2</sup>

After this introduction to the introduction, I shall suggest in section 2 that foundationalism characteristically takes reality-structuring relations to be transitive and irreflexive, and also to satisfy a condition we call “ancestry well-foundedness.” In sections 3–4, we discuss anti-foundationalist views that reject respectively one of those three features. We then turn from a sketch of some formal background to introducing the specific themes developed by the contributions to this special issue: Janssen-Lauret’s account of Stebbing’s antifoundationalist views (section 5); O’Conaill and Pearson’s epistemological question to anti-foundationalism (section 6); Billon’s and Simsek’s explorations of the connection between ground, explanation, and foundationalism (section 7); and Kappes’ question whether metaground leads to infinite descent (section 8).

## 2 Reality-Structuring Relations

We shall not try to give a full account of what it takes for a relation to count as reality-structuring. We do, however, take it to be connected to notions of priority and explanation. If  $R$  is a reality-structuring relation that relates  $x$  and  $y$ , then  $x$  is in some sense metaphysically prior to  $y$ , or metaphysically

- 
- 1 Some authors deny that there is a relation of grounding (Correia 2010) or of causation, preferring to express the relevant claims using sentential operators. With suitable higher-order expressive resources, we could recast our discussion in their favoured key.
  - 2 See Dixon (2020) and Bliss and Priest (2018) for taxonomies of pertinent arguments.

59 explains  $y$ .<sup>3</sup> They also need to be fairly natural, as opposed to disjunctive or  
 60 gerrymandered ones (Lewis 1983; Sider 2011)—a point to which we shall  
 61 return.

62 Given a reality-structuring relation  $R$ , we can discuss whether foundation-  
 63 alism is true about  $R$ . Of course, it might turn out that foundationalism is  
 64 true about one such relation but not another. Perhaps every object is com-  
 65 posed of mereologically atomic parts, while every fact has further grounds.<sup>4</sup>  
 66 We shall not discuss specific reality-structuring relations here; rather, we are  
 67 asking what formal features of reality-structuring relations may be taken to  
 68 capture the foundationalist thesis. Our discussion draws on previous attempts  
 69 at mapping out this region of conceptual space, including Dixon (2016, 2020,  
 70 2023), Rabin and Rabern (2016), and Bliss and Priest (2018). Many of the  
 71 observations that follow can be found in those authors, though sometimes  
 72 couched in a different terminology.

73 The following three formal features are familiar and commonly assumed  
 74 to hold of proper parthood, partial grounding, and causation:

75 IRREFLEXIVITY. Not  $xRx$ .

76 ASYMMETRY. If  $xRy$ , then not  $yRx$ .

77 TRANSITIVITY. If  $xRy$  and  $yRz$ , then  $xRz$ .<sup>5</sup>

78 If a relation has all these features, it is a *strict partial order*. As a characterisa-  
 79 tion of strict partial orders, the list contains some redundancy: asymmetry  
 80 entails irreflexivity, and irreflexivity and transitivity jointly entail asymmetry.  
 81 However, we will later explore views that accept some but not all of these  
 82 theses.

83 It is also widely held that suitable generalisations of these features hold for  
 84 mereological composition, full grounding, and joint causation. These relations  
 85 are not naturally regimented in the form  $xRy$  but rather as  $xxRy$ , with  $xx$  a  
 86 plural variable. The relation  $R$  is then collective rather than distributive on

3 It is tempting to add that  $x$  will be more fundamental than  $y$ . However, it is not clear that this would fit every candidate we shall consider, such as causation. On such issues, see the discussion in Bennett (2017), where a class of “building relations” is characterised.

4 See Raven (2016) for relevant discussion. For the question of how we might read off an overall structure of the world from a multiplicity of reality-structuring relations, see Bennett (2017).

5 The theses are taken to be tacitly universally quantified.

the left (that  $p$  and  $q$  fully ground  $r$  does not imply that  $p$  fully grounds  $r$ ).<sup>6</sup> Apart from a few passing comments, we shall stick to the special case of the non-collective relations, leaving it open what a generalisation might look like.

It is customary to divide anti-foundationalist views about a relation  $R$  into coherentist ones that allow loops, or cycles, and infinitist ones that allow infinite descent or abysses.<sup>7</sup> Strict partial orders do not allow any loops and are thus incompatible with coherentism. For *reductio*, suppose that there is a chain  $x_1Rx_2, \dots, x_{n-1}Rx_n, x_nRx_1$ . Then by transitivity,  $x_1Rx_1$ , in violation of irreflexivity.

However, strict partial orders allow for infinite descent. A foundationalist view that wishes to rule out that possibility will need a further principle. A natural choice is the thesis that  $R$  is *well-founded*. The set-theoretic notion of wellfoundedness will need some introduction, though readers familiar with it can skip ahead until the first candidate explication of foundationalism is introduced.

**WELL-FOUNDEDNESS.** Every non-empty set  $S$  has a member that is  $R$ -minimal in  $S$ .

An element  $x$  of  $S$  is said to be  *$R$ -minimal* in  $S$  just in case there is no  $y$  in  $S$  such that  $yRx$ .

**WELL-FOUNDEDNESS** entails asymmetry (and hence irreflexivity). For suppose that  $R$  is not asymmetric. Then there are  $x$  and  $y$  such that  $xRy$  and  $yRx$ . Then  $\{x, y\}$  is a non-empty set without an  $R$ -minimal member.

For a paradigm of a well-founded strict partial order, consider the relation  $R_n$  that holds between  $x$  and  $y$  just in case they are both natural numbers, and  $x$  is smaller than  $y$ . Pick any non-empty set  $S$ . If the set contains any  $x$  that is not a natural number, then there is no  $y$  such that  $yR_nx$ . Hence  $x$  is minimal in  $S$ . If  $S$  is a set of natural numbers, then it clearly contains a smallest natural number  $x$ . Then  $x$  will be an  $R_n$ -minimal element. So every non-empty  $S$  has a member that is  $R$ -minimal in  $S$ .

For a paradigm of strict partial order that is not well-founded, consider the relation  $R_i$  that holds between  $x$  and  $y$  just in case they are both integers, and  $x$  is smaller than  $y$ . For every integer  $x$ , there is an integer  $y$  such that  $yR_ix$ .

<sup>6</sup> For reasons to prefer the term “left-collective” to the perhaps more familiar “many-one” in this context, see Litland (2018).

<sup>7</sup> The terminology of an “abyss” is due to Loss (2016).



119 Hence the set of all integers is a non-empty set without an element that is  
 120  $R_i$ -minimal in it.

121 The relation  $R_i$  has an infinite domain—there are infinitely many  $x$  such  
 122 that for some  $y$ , either  $xRy$  or  $yRx$ . Any example of a strict partial order that  
 123 is not well-founded must share this feature. For suppose that  $S$  is a non-empty  
 124 set without an  $R$ -minimal member, with  $x$  in  $S$ . Then for any  $n$ , there is a chain  
 125  $x_nRx_{n-1}, \dots, x_2Rx_1, x_1Rx$ . Since  $R$  is transitive and irreflexive, all elements of  
 126 this chain must be distinct. For any natural number  $n$ , then,  $S$  has more than  
 127  $n$  members and thus needs to be infinite. On the other hand, the example of  
 128 the natural numbers shows that having an infinite domain is only a sufficient  
 129 and not a necessary condition for a relation being well-founded.

130 A first candidate explication of foundationalism about a reality-structuring  
 131 relation  $R$  takes it to be the thesis that  $R$  is a well-founded partial order. We  
 132 shall now discuss this candidate explication with regards to the relation of  
 133 proper parthood and various hypotheses about the mereological structure of  
 134 the world.

135 According to what we shall call a *finite particle theory*, there are finitely  
 136 many particles in the universe, and everything is composed of them. The  
 137 particles are mereologically atomic: they do not contain any proper parts.  
 138 However, they are spatially extended. It follows from that theory that proper  
 139 parthood has a finite domain.<sup>8</sup> So our finite particle theory entails that proper  
 140 parthood is a well-founded partial order.

141 Now consider a *gunk theory*, according to which everything has proper  
 142 parts. Matter is infinitely divisible. Let  $x$  be any thing, and consider the set of  
 143 its proper parts. Since everything has a proper part, that set has no minimal  
 144 member with respect to proper parthood. So the gunk theory entails that  
 145 proper parthood is not well-founded.

146 So far, so good for the provisional explication of foundationalism about  
 147  $R$  as the thesis that  $R$  is a well-founded strict partial order, or equivalently,  
 148 a well-founded transitive relation. The finite particle theory should clearly  
 149 count as foundationalist, and the gunk theory as anti-foundationalist, and  
 150 the explication delivers those verdicts. However, while few have doubted that  
 151  $R$ 's being a well-founded strict partial order is sufficient for foundationalism  
 152 about  $R$ , it has been argued that it is not necessary.

---

8 If unrestricted mereological composition holds, and there are  $n$  atomic particles, the domain of proper parthood will have size  $2^n - 1$ , which is of course finite if  $n$  is.

153 Consider a *field theory*, which holds that everything is composed of  
 154 extensionless points. (The familiar fields from physics—gravitational, electro-  
 155 magnetic, etc.—are functions defined on such points.) These points do not  
 156 have proper parts and are thus minimal with respect to proper parthood. But  
 157 consider the set of objects of non-zero volume. That set is non-empty, and  
 158 every such object has another one as a proper part. Hence the set has no  
 159 minimal element with respect to proper parthood, such that proper parthood  
 160 is not well-founded.

161 The first explication would thus classify the field theory as anti-  
 162 foundationalist. This may seem to be the wrong result: for all we have said,  
 163 our field theory satisfies foundationalist strictures. It seems to capture the  
 164 thought that everything is determined by the bottom level, consisting of  
 165 mereological atoms.

166 For another illustration, consider an *infinite particle theory*. According to  
 167 that theory, there are infinitely many spatially extended mereological atoms,  
 168 such that space itself is infinitely extended. Moreover, any plurality of them  
 169 composes something. Now consider the set of things composed by infinitely  
 170 many mereological atoms. That set is non-empty, and every member has  
 171 another one as a proper part. For suppose that  $x$  is composed from an infinite  
 172 plurality of mereological atoms. Then the same plurality minus one is also  
 173 infinite, and its members will compose a distinct thing  $y$ , which is a proper  
 174 part of  $x$ . So the set has no minimal element, and proper parthood fails to be  
 175 well-founded.

176 Again, this seems to be the wrong result. Like field theory, infinite particle  
 177 theory seems intuitively foundationalist. According to both theories, there is  
 178 infinite descent of proper parthood. But the infinite descent is *bounded below*,  
 179 in the apt terminology of Rabin and Rabern (2016).

180 So we may wish to replace well-foundedness with a weaker condition in  
 181 the explication of foundationalism. (Philosophers who think that ‘foundational-  
 182 ism’ is merely a term of art, with a definition to be stipulated rather than  
 183 discovered, may still find it worthwhile to distinguish stronger and weaker  
 184 conditions on a reality-structuring relation.) A schematic version of a candi-  
 185 date mereological axiom (Simons 1987, 42; Varzi 2016) is a natural choice:

186 ATOMICITY.  $x$  is  $R$ -minimal, or there is an  $R$ -minimal  $y$  such that  
 187  $yRx$ .

188 Here,  $R$ -minimality is understood absolutely rather than relative to a given  
 189 set, as in **WELL-FOUNDEDNESS** above:  $x$  is  $R$ -minimal if there is no  $y$  such that  
 190  $yRx$ .<sup>9</sup> If we call an  $R$ -minimal element an *atom*, **ATOMICITY** is equivalent to  
 191 the claim that for every non-atom  $x$ , there is an atom  $y$  that stands in  $R$  to  $x$ .

192 **ATOMICITY** is entailed by **WELL-FOUNDEDNESS**.<sup>10</sup> As desired, the converse  
 193 does not hold, such that **ATOMICITY** is strictly weaker. **ATOMICITY** is of course  
 194 compatible with the finite particle theory. Unlike **WELL-FOUNDEDNESS**, it is  
 195 compatible with the kind of infinite descent that is bounded from below, as  
 196 exemplified by the field and infinite particle theories. In contrast, **ATOMICITY**  
 197 does rule out the gunk theory, on which nothing is minimal with respect to  
 198 proper parthood. An explication of foundationalism about  $R$  by the conditions  
 199 of **IRREFLEXIVITY**, **TRANSITIVITY**, and **ATOMICITY** thus seems to give the  
 200 intuitively correct classification of each of our four theories.

201 **ATOMICITY** also fails to entail **ASYMMETRY** or **IRREFLEXIVITY**, again in  
 202 contrast to **WELL-FOUNDEDNESS**. On its own, or supplemented with just tran-  
 203 sitivity, it is thus compatible with a different kind of scenario we have not yet  
 204 considered:  $R$ -loops that are bounded below, i.e., do not involve things at the  
 205 bottom of the hierarchy. It is doubtful whether loops of proper parthood that  
 206 are bounded below are conceptually possible (Kearns 2011). Some theorists  
 207 of causation, in contrast, have thought that local loops that can be causally  
 208 accounted for by something outside the loop are less problematic than those  
 209 that cannot (Lewis 1976, 74).

210 In the presence of **TRANSITIVITY**, we can replace **ATOMICITY** by a weaker  
 211 condition in this explication, using a new technical term about to be intro-  
 212 duced. Doing so will help us generate a more fine-grained taxonomy of anti-  
 213 foundationalist options later. It will also further illuminate the relationship  
 214 between **WELL-FOUNDEDNESS** and **ATOMICITY**.

215 For a given object  $x$ , let the  $R$ -ancestry of  $x$  be the set of all  $y$  such that  
 216  $yRx$ . So if  $R$  is proper parthood, the  $R$ -ancestry of  $x$  consists of the proper  
 217 parts of  $x$ ; if  $R$  is partial grounding, the  $R$ -ancestry of  $x$  consists of the partial

---

9 **ATOMICITY** is the restriction to singular argument places on the left of a condition that has been proposed by Dixon (2016) and Rabin and Rabern (2016) to explicate foundationalism about the left-collective relation of full grounding.

10 Suppose that atomicity fails for  $R$ . Then there is an  $x$  that is not  $R$ -minimal, and such that there is no  $R$ -minimal  $y$  such that  $yRx$ . Pick such an  $x$  and let  $S$  be the set of  $y$  such that  $yRx$ . Since  $x$  is not  $R$ -minimal,  $S$  is not empty, and since there is no  $R$ -minimal  $y$  such that  $yRx$ ,  $S$  does not contain any  $R$ -minimal element. Hence  $R$  is not well-founded.

218 grounds of  $x$ . A set  $S$  is an  $R$ -ancestry just in case there is an  $x$  such that  $S$  is  
 219 the  $R$ -ancestry of  $x$ . Then consider:

220 ANCESTRY WELL-FOUNDEDNESS. Every non-empty  $R$ -ancestry set  
 221  $S$  has a member that is  $R$ -minimal in  $S$ .

222 ANCESTRY WELL-FOUNDEDNESS has the same form as WELL-FOUNDEDNESS:  
 223 it results from inserting “ $R$ -ancestry” before “set,” which has the effect of  
 224 restricting the domain of sets quantified over.<sup>11</sup>

225 While the field theory and the infinite particle theory are incompatible  
 226 with proper parthood being well-founded, they are perfectly compatible with  
 227 it being ancestry well-founded. On those theories, the ancestry of a thing,  
 228 relative to proper parthood, is either empty (if the thing is an atom) or else  
 229 it includes the atoms it is made up of. The sets that provided counterexam-  
 230 ples to WELL-FOUNDEDNESS are not ancestry sets. One way to verify this is  
 231 by observing that neither includes mereological atoms (points or particles,  
 232 respectively), and that any ancestry will include mereological atoms if one of  
 233 these theories is true.

234 To show that ANCESTRY WELL-FOUNDEDNESS is entailed by ATOMICITY,  
 235 suppose that  $S$  is a non-empty ancestry set. Then there is an  $x$  such that  $S$  is the  
 236 ancestry of  $x$ . Since  $S$  is non-empty,  $x$  is not  $R$ -minimal. By ATOMICITY, there  
 237 is an  $R$ -minimal  $y$  such that  $yRx$ . Hence  $y$  is in  $S$ , and since it is  $R$ -minimal, it  
 238 is *a fortiori*  $R$ -minimal in  $S$ .

239 Conversely, we can show that together with TRANSITIVITY, ANCESTRY  
 240 WELL-FOUNDEDNESS entails ATOMICITY, ensuring that the result of replacing  
 241 ATOMICITY with ANCESTRY WELL-FOUNDEDNESS in the above explication  
 242 of foundationalism is equivalent to the original. Suppose that ATOMICITY  
 243 fails for  $R$ . Then there is an  $x$  that is not minimal, and such that there is  
 244 no  $R$ -minimal  $y$  such that  $yRx$ . Consider the ancestry set  $S$  of  $x$ . Since  $x$  is  
 245 not minimal,  $S$  is non-empty. Consider any  $y$  in  $S$ . Since  $y$  is not  $R$ -minimal,  
 246 there is a  $z$  such that  $zRy$ . Hence  $zRy$  and  $yRx$ , and by transitivity,  $zRx$ . So  
 247  $z$  is in  $S$  too, and it follows that  $y$  is not  $R$ -minimal in  $S$ . Since  $y$  was chosen

---

11 In a generalisation of the concept that can apply to left-collective relations, an  $R$ -ancestry can be taken to be a set of pluralities. The key task would be to define a relation  $R'$  among pluralities with reference to which minimality is defined. If  $R$  is full grounding,  $R'$  might hold between  $X$  and  $Y$  iff  $X$  is a weak distributive ground of  $Y$ , but not vice versa. (See Fine 2012, 54 for the relevant notion of distributive ground.)

248 arbitrarily, it follows that  $S$  is a non-empty ancestry set without a member  
249 that is  $R$ -minimal in  $S$ .

250 So on our second attempt, foundationalism about  $R$  may be explicated as  
251 the conjunction of three claims:

- 252 •  $R$  is irreflexive.
- 253 •  $R$  is transitive.
- 254 •  $R$  is ancestry well-founded.

255 (To recap: asymmetry is omitted because it is entailed by irreflexivity and  
256 transitivity; atomicity because it is entailed by ancestry well-foundedness  
257 and transitivity; and well-foundedness because it is arguably not required by  
258 foundationalism.)

259 In the following, we aim to highlight a number of ways in which founda-  
260 tionalism thus understood might fail to be true of a reality-structuring relation.  
261 We will discuss a strategy to deflate certain debates concerning formal features  
262 by taking them to be essentially verbal.

263 In so far as the project of explicating (rather than stipulatively defining) a  
264 technical term like “foundationalism” makes sense, one may take this proposal  
265 to do a reasonably good job. It reflects a typical conception of foundationalism  
266 that informs contemporary metaphysical work. As we will see, however, there  
267 are reasons to hold that it exaggerates the foundationalist’s commitment.

268 When looking at varieties of metaphysical anti-foundationalism, a natural  
269 way to classify them is according to which conjunct they reject. In the follow-  
270 ing, the focus will be mostly on moderate versions of anti-foundationalism  
271 that leave much of the structure intact.

### 273 **Rejecting Transitivity**

273 Foundationalism about a relation  $R$ , as we have characterised it, holds that  $R$   
274 is transitive, irreflexive, and ancestry well-founded. We might think rejecting  
275 the transitivity of reality-structuring relations is a promising way to articulate  
276 an anti-foundationalist metaphysics. There are, after all, *prima facie* cases  
277 of transitivity failure for certain reality-structuring relations. Several such  
278 counterexamples have been proposed for causation (Hall 2000) and for partial  
279 grounding (Schaffer 2012). Other putative reality-structuring relations are non-  
280 transitive by design. There is increasing recognition of the theoretical need  
281 for a non-transitive notion of *immediate* ground (Fine 2012; deRosset 2017;

282 Werner 2021; Correia 2021). In her list of building relations, Karen Bennett  
 283 (2017) includes a number of non-transitive ones, notably set formation:  $x$   
 284 forms the set  $\{x\}$ —it is its sole member—and  $\{x\}$  forms the set  $\{\{x\}\}$ , but  $x$  does  
 285 not form the set  $\{\{x\}\}$ , not being a member of it. Accordingly, Bennett rejects  
 286 the requirement that building relations need to be transitive, in contrast to  
 287 the conditions of asymmetry and irreflexivity, which she is happy to impose.

288 Yet debates about foundationalism are not usually seen to hinge on the  
 289 status of **TRANSITIVITY**. What we take to be a typical attitude is expressed by  
 290 Gideon Rosen in his seminal paper on grounding:

291 The grounding relation is not obviously transitive, but I shall  
 292 assume transitivity in a strong form. [...] If the most fundamen-  
 293 tal relation in the vicinity is not transitive, then [the symbol for  
 294 grounding] picks out its transitive closure.

295 Whenever we are talking about a binary relation  $R$ , that relation will have  
 296 a transitive closure  $R^*$ —the smallest transitive relation that is implied by  
 297  $R$ —and we are at liberty to announce that we are talking about  $R^*$ . (If  $R$  is  
 298 already transitive,  $R^*$  will simply be  $R$  itself.)

299 One way of developing the thought here—perhaps going beyond what  
 300 Rosen intended—is to take **TRANSITIVITY** as partly helping us latch onto one  
 301 referent of “is a ground of” from a pool of potential ones. Other things said by  
 302 way of explicating the new predicate underdetermine its referent on that con-  
 303 ception. Perhaps one candidate is significantly more natural than the others  
 304 and is thus the referent. But if so, such naturalness comparisons are hardly  
 305 transparent to us. The satisfaction of **TRANSITIVITY** is then partly definitive  
 306 of the relation theorised about. But if so, then it cannot be a substantive claim  
 307 about a relation reference to which had been independently secured. It might  
 308 seem to follow that any dispute about the transitivity of grounding is merely  
 309 verbal.

310 On that picture, it is possible to proceed as Rosen does and make ground  
 311 transitive by stipulation. We may wonder, though, whether it is advisable.  
 312 Given that the predicate introduced is to pick out a reality-structuring relation,  
 313 would we not wish it to be the most natural one in the neighbourhood? We take  
 314 that to be an interesting question, but we shall not press it. Perhaps usefulness  
 315 in metaphysical theorising does not reliably correlate with naturalness. In  
 316 the realm of genealogy, there is some plausibility to the thought that the  
 317 parenthood relation is more natural but less theoretically useful than the  
 318 ancestry relation, which is its transitive closure.

319 However, there is reason to doubt that questions about the transitivity of  
320 reality-structuring relations are typically verbal. Consider David Lewis' first  
321 and most influential theory of causation, articulated in Lewis (1973). He first  
322 defined a relation of causal dependence between events and then claimed that  
323 causation is its transitive closure. Arguably, that move was not prompted by a  
324 need to resolve a problem of underdetermination in the expression "causally  
325 depends on": that expression had been defined, not just elucidated.<sup>12</sup> Rather,  
326 the move is recommended by the pre-theoretical plausibility of the claim that  
327 causation is transitive and since it enables Lewis' theory to match the intuitive  
328 verdicts in so-called "early preemption" cases. The claim looks as substantial  
329 as any in metaphysics, and disagreement about it has not been suspected of  
330 being verbal. When the theory was confronted with cases where causation  
331 is intuitively not transitive, nobody responded by saying that Lewis' theory  
332 is by definition about the transitive closure of the most natural relation in  
333 the vicinity. Moreover, whether something is a cause can sometimes make a  
334 practical difference that is not merely verbal. Assuming that I am only liable  
335 to pay compensation for damage I have caused, whether I am liable may in  
336 certain situations turn on whether causation is transitive or not.

337 The view that ground is transitive by stipulation does not make good sense  
338 of how debates about ground are conducted. Rosen's paper itself is a case in  
339 point. Before discussing transitivity, he tries to convince us that ground is  
340 irreflexive.

341 The case for strong irreflexivity is clear enough. Just as no fact  
342 can make itself obtain, no fact can play a role along with other  
343 facts in making itself obtain.

344 However, it might happen that the most natural relation in the vicinity is  
345 irreflexive, but its transitive closure is not. So if grounding was by stipulation  
346 transitive, we would expect to be alerted to that, but we are not.

347 Lewis' theory of causation is an example of a conflict between irreflexivity  
348 and transitivity. By definition, causal dependence relates distinct events only  
349 and is thus irreflexive. As Lewis (1986b) notes, though, his theory allows for  
350 self-causation. They arise if there are loops of causal dependence, perhaps  
351 due to time travel.

---

12 Maybe there is some underdetermination due to context, but that is presumably an orthogonal issue.

352 The more general point is that what may look like a stipulation—such as  
 353 saying that relation  $R$  is transitive—can turn out to have substantive impli-  
 354 cations, specifically for other formal features such as irreflexivity. For that  
 355 reason, such formal features are best discussed in their interaction rather than  
 356 one by one.

357 The question whether a certain reality-structuring relation is transitive is  
 358 a substantive one and not a verbal one due to one party talking about one  
 359 relation and the other about its transitive closure. Nonetheless, concerning the  
 360 specific question whether foundationalism is true about  $R$ , it may well be that  
 361 the transitive closure  $R^*$  of  $R$  is all we need to consider. The question whether  
 362 foundationalism is true of a non-transitive relation such as immediate ground,  
 363 say, is naturally understood as the question whether its transitive closure  
 364 satisfies certain conditions.<sup>13</sup> So there is a case to modify the explication again.  
 365 On the third attempt, foundationalism about  $R$  is explicated as the conjunction  
 366 of the following two claims:

- 367 •  $R^*$  is irreflexive.
- 368 •  $R^*$  is ancestry well-foundedness.

369 Clearly, any  $R$  satisfying the previous explication also satisfies this one: if  
 370  $R$  is transitive, then  $R = R^*$ , and so the irreflexivity of and ancestry well-  
 371 foundedness of  $R^*$  follows from that of  $R$ .

372 The converse does not hold, of course, since  $R$  may be non-transitive even if  
 373  $R^*$  is irreflexive and ancestry well-founded. So the third explication is strictly  
 374 weaker than the second.

375 While it may matter greatly whether a given relation is transitive, the truth  
 376 of foundationalism about  $R$  does not hinge on it, if this third explication is  
 377 right. It appears that if foundationalism is our concern, transitivity is not  
 378 where the action is, after all.

#### 374 4 Rejecting Irreflexivity or Ancestry Well-Foundedness

380 We have noted that the question whether a certain reality-structuring rela-  
 381 tion is transitive has occasionally been taken to be verbal. The same applies  
 382 to the question whether such a relation is irreflexive or not. If one philoso-  
 383 pher insists that parthood is irreflexive, and another that it is reflexive, it is  
 384 tempting to conclude that their disagreement is verbal—one using the term

---

13 Dixon (2023) effectively makes that move.



385 “part” for what mereologists call “proper part.” However, the possibility of  
 386 verbal disagreement about an issue has no tendency to show that non-verbal  
 387 disagreement is not also possible.

388 Again, like in the case of transitivity, we may think that we impose irreflexivity  
 389 by *fiat*: stipulate that if  $R$  is not itself irreflexive, one is referring to its  
 390 *irreflexive restriction*  $R^-$ , which relates  $x$  and  $y$  iff  $xRy$  and  $x \neq y$ .<sup>14</sup> But we  
 391 have already seen that we cannot simultaneously ensure transitivity and ir-  
 392 reflexivity by *fiat*: by taking the transitive closure of causal dependence, Lewis  
 393 lost the irreflexivity of causation. Conversely, the irreflexive restriction of a  
 394 transitive relation need not be transitive.<sup>15</sup>

395 Does  $R^*$  need to be irreflexive for foundationalism about  $R$  to be true?  
 396 Perhaps not. Recall that, as originally conceived, foundationalism rules out  
 397 both loops and infinite descent. We then weakened the foundationalist ban on  
 398 infinite descent to allow for descent that is bounded below. This was motivated  
 399 by considering two toy physical theories, a field theory and an infinite particle  
 400 theory. We may analogously weaken the ban on loops, allowing them as long  
 401 as they are bounded below.<sup>16</sup> Since loops of parthood are hard to get one’s  
 402 head around, mereology cannot be expected to supply motivating examples  
 403 this time. Perhaps there are loops of ground among semantic facts due to self-  
 404 referential devices in the language, and yet all semantic facts are ultimately  
 405 grounded in non-semantic facts. If so, loops or cycles arise at the higher levels  
 406 of reality but not at the bottom level.

407 In light of the preceding discussion, we arrive at a fourth and even weaker  
 408 explication of foundationalism about  $R$ : as the thesis that  $R^*$  is ancestry well-  
 409 founded.

410 If  $R^*$  is not ancestry well-founded, then either there are circles at the bottom  
 411 level of reality or there is unbounded infinite descent.<sup>17</sup> The first option

---

14 Proper parthood is often defined as the irreflexive restriction of parthood. (Alternatively, and equivalently given other assumptions, it is defined as the *asymmetric restriction* of parthood, where the asymmetric restriction  $R'$  of  $R$  relates  $x$  and  $y$  iff  $xRy$  and not  $yRx$ .)

15 The asymmetric restriction of the transitive closure of  $R$  is guaranteed to be both transitive and asymmetric (and thus irreflexive). However, it may lack other crucial features, such as non-triviality: if everything forms part of an  $R$ -cycle, then  $R^{*'} will be the empty relation on  $R$ 's domain.$

16 Again, Dixon (2023) deserves credit for articulating this move.

17 We may note that while  $R^*$  being ancestry well-founded is necessary for foundationalism about  $R$ ,  $R$  being ancestry well-founded is not. Consider a structure where  $xRy$ ,  $yRy$ , and  $yRz$  holds. Then the ancestry of  $z$  is the unit set of  $y$ , which has no  $R$ -minimal element. However,  $x$  is the only element at the bottom level, and intuitively, foundationalism is true about  $R$ .

412 has received quite a bit of attention recently (Barnes 2018; McKenzie 2011;  
 413 Thompson 2016; Calosi and Morganti 2021). Some authors take it to be anti-  
 414 foundationalist, while others have suggested that it may be compatible with  
 415 foundationalism (Bennett 2017; Giannotti 2021; Dixon 2023). After all, it does  
 416 seem to make sense to identify a “bottom level” of reality, consisting of those  
 417  $x$  such that nothing stands in the *asymmetric restriction* of  $R$  to  $x$  (i.e., no  $y$   
 418 is such that  $yRx$  but not  $xRy$ ). In our view, foundationalism ceases to be a  
 419 distinctive theoretical option if this move is made. However, this is not the  
 420 place to argue for this.

421 Recapitulating the four candidate explications of foundationalism about  $R$   
 422 in reverse order: The final explication requires that  $R^*$ —the transitive closure  
 423 of  $R$ —is ancestry well-founded. The penultimate one adds that  $R^*$  is irreflexive,  
 424 ruling out loops bounded below. The antepenultimate explication adds that  
 425  $R$  is transitive. The most demanding one, which we considered first, adds  
 426 that  $R$  is well-founded. If we wished to allow loops bounded below but not  
 427 infinite descent bounded below, we could require instead that  $R^*$  is ancestry  
 428 well-founded and that  $R^{*-}$ —the irreflexive restriction of the transitive closure  
 429 of  $R$ —is well-founded.

430 The remainder of the introduction offers summaries of the contributions  
 431 to this special issue.

## 432 **5 Anti-foundationalism in the History of Analytic** 433 **Philosophy**

434 Metaphysical foundationalism seems to have been a commitment of the three  
 435 men who are often considered the founding fathers of analytic philosophy:  
 436 Moore, Russell, and Wittgenstein. In “Susan Stebbing on Well-Foundedness,”  
 437 Frederique Janssen-Lauret draws attention to anti-foundationalist elements in  
 438 the thought of Susan Stebbing, another early analytic philosopher whose work  
 439 has been neglected until recently. Against some other interpreters, Janssen-  
 440 Lauret argues that Stebbing did not abandon her method of metaphysical  
 441 analysis in her mature work. Rather, she gave up the assumption that if there  
 442 is such a thing as metaphysical analysis, then it must terminate in simples.  
 443 Whether it does or not is a broadly scientific question, not to be answered a  
 444 priori. Janssen-Lauret then warns us against understanding Stebbing’s meta-  
 445 physical analysis through the lens of contemporary theoretical posits such as  
 446 truthmaking or grounding.

## 446 Anti-foundationalism and Modal Epistemology

448 Many contemporary philosophers would agree with Stebbing that it is an a  
 449 posteriori question whether foundationalism is actually true. Much of the de-  
 450 bate concerns the metaphysical possibility that the structure of reality might  
 451 exhibit infinite descent or circularity. We might then take a step back and ask:  
 452 How can we come to know that a structure is metaphysically possible, other  
 453 than by inference from its actuality? This question belongs to modal episte-  
 454 mology, or perhaps more accurately the epistemology of possibility. A natural  
 455 story is broadly recombinatorial: we know that a unicorn is possible because  
 456 it is possible that a horse and a horn are arranged in a contiguous manner,  
 457 and the existence of a contiguous arrangement of a horse and a horn grounds  
 458 the existence of a unicorn.<sup>18</sup> More generally: we establish the metaphysical  
 459 possibility of non-fundamental  $p$  by establishing the metaphysical possibility  
 460 of a ground of  $p$ . Given such a principle, belief in the possibility of infinite  
 461 regress seems to face the regress of justification familiar from discussion of  
 462 skepticism. In “Infinite Regresses, Ground Conditions & Metaphysical Satis-  
 463 faction,” Donnchadh O’Conaill and Olley Pearson articulate a principle along  
 464 these lines, which they call the “Principle of Satisfaction.” They use it to argue  
 465 that we currently lack reasons to think that infinite descent is metaphysically  
 466 possible.

## 467 Grounding, Explanation, and Foundationalism

468 The literature on grounding typically has accepted a rather tight connection  
 469 between ground and explanation. It is customary to distinguish between  
 470 “unionist” views that take grounding to be metaphysical explanation and  
 471 “separatist” views that take grounding to *back* metaphysical explanation.<sup>19</sup>  
 472 Analogous views have been distinguished in the older debate about causation  
 473 and causal explanation. However, it may not be plausible that all reality-  
 474 structuring are explanatory or back explanations. As we have seen, Bennett  
 475 (2017) does not claim that all building relations are.

476 How does foundationalism bear on that question? One tempting thought  
 477 is that it is really the connection to explanation that drives foundatio-  
 478 nalist intuitions about a certain relation. Explanations cannot go on forever,

---

18 The second step is controversial (Kripke 1980), but the issues it raises are orthogonal to those of present concern.

19 The labels are introduced in Raven (2015).

479 and there is no such thing as a circular explanation. This suggests that anti-  
480 foundationalists about a given reality-structuring relation need to convince  
481 us that widely held views of explanations are wrong, or else revise the con-  
482 nection between that relation and explanation. The relationship between  
483 reality-structuring relations and explanation is discussed by two papers in  
484 this volume.

485 In his recent book on infinitism, Ross Cameron (2022) pursues the second  
486 option: metaphysical determination relations—roughly what we have called  
487 “reality-structuring” relations—need not be explanatory. His argument turns  
488 on cases of infinite descent. “Determination Relations and Metaphysical  
489 Explanations” criticises Cameron’s argument but nonetheless agrees with  
490 the conclusion. In the view of Maşuk Şimşek, it is loops, rather than infinite  
491 descent, that provide a strong case for divorcing metaphysical determination  
492 and explanation.

493 “A Recipe for Non-wellfounded but Complete Chains of Explanations  
494 (And Other Determination Relations)” casts doubt on the widely held view  
495 that foundationalism gives us superior explanations to anti-foundationalism.  
496 Alexandre Billon works with a conception of ground where grounds do not  
497 explain what they ground all by themselves, but in conjunction with certain  
498 laws of metaphysics (Schaffer 2017). Given such a conception, it is natural to  
499 ask what is explained by the fact that something is grounded according to a  
500 law?

501 Suppose that it is a law that only people without any non-inherited money  
502 can inherit, and that if someone inherits, they have one pound less than their  
503 testator, or zero, whichever is greater. Can you infer how much money you  
504 have from the assumption that you are at the end of the chain of  $n$  inheritances,  
505 for finite  $n$ ? No. For any  $m$ , your information is compatible with you having  
506  $m$  pound, since the starting capital may have been  $m + n$ . However, from  
507 the assumption that your money has been passed down to you through an  
508 infinite chain of inheritance, you can infer that you have zero pounds. Given  
509 a suitable connection between the ability to infer and explanation, it follows  
510 that the existence of an infinite chain is explanatory in a way that the existence  
511 of a finite chain is not. So there is a sense in which infinite chains make for  
512 superior explanations.

## 8 Metaground and Infinite Descent

514 Finally, “Grounding Ground and the (In-)Escapable Ill-Foundedness of the  
 515 Inclusive ‘Explains’” discusses whether there might be an infinitely descend-  
 516 ing chain of *metagrounds*: grounds of facts that themselves involve ground.  
 517 The paper makes a number of moves in a short space, so it may not be remiss  
 518 for my summary of it to be a bit more expansive than that of the other papers.  
 519 I shall introduce the issue in a simplified form, abstracting away from some  
 520 subtleties Yannic Kappes considers.

521 Where  $f$  and  $g$  are facts, let the fact that  $g$  is a partial ground of  $f$  be a *link*  
 522 for  $f$ .<sup>20</sup> A sequence of facts is a *link sequence* just in case each successor in  
 523 the sequence is a link for its predecessor.

524 It has been widely accepted that links are not fundamental. So they are  
 525 grounded ( $<$  expresses partial ground):

526 LINK-GROUNDED. Any link is grounded.

$$527 \quad g < f \rightarrow \exists h(h < (g < f))$$

528 Suppose that  $f_2$  is a ground of  $f_1$ . Then given LINK-GROUNDED, there are facts  
 529 that form an infinite linking sequence with  $f_1$  as the first element:

$$f_1, f_2 < f_1, f_3 < (f_2 < f_1), f_4 < (f_3 < (f_2 < f_1)), \dots$$

530 If we define  $F_1$  as  $f_1$  and  $F_{i+1}$  as  $f_{i+1} < F_i$  for  $i > 1$ , this sequence can be  
 531 rewritten as:

$$F_1, F_2, F_3, \dots$$

532 LINK-GROUNDED thus entails that if there is an instance of ground at all,  
 533 there is an infinite linking sequence.

534 Let a *ground sequence* be a sequence in which each member is grounded  
 535 by the subsequent one. As a number of authors have pointed out in the  
 536 literature, none of the generally accepted principles guarantee that the above  
 537 link sequence is a ground sequence:  $F_2 = f_2 < f_1$  may not ground  $F_1 = f_1$ , for  
 538 example. However, there does seem to be a whiff of infinite descent about  
 539 that sequence. It is natural to wonder whether its existence guarantees that

---

20 We could call links “grounding facts.” But that term is best avoided due to an ambiguity pointed out by Katherine Hawley (2019): a grounding fact could be a fact is a ground of another fact (as  $g$  is, given that  $g$  grounds  $f$ ) or a fact that has the relation of ground as a constituent, i.e., a link such as the fact that  $g$  grounds  $f$ .

540 of a closely related infinite grounding sequence. As we are about to see, the  
 541 following will do the job:

542 LINK-GROUND. Any link for  $f$  is a ground of  $f$ .  
 543  $g < f \rightarrow (g < f) < f$

544 Consider the element  $F_{i+1}$ . It is of the form  $f_{i+1} < F_i$ , where  $F_i$  is the prede-  
 545 cessor of  $F_{i+1}$  in the sequence. Then since  $f_{i+1} < F_i$  is true, an instance of  
 546 LINK-GROUND together with modus ponens yields:

$$(f_{i+1} < F_i) < F_i$$

547 Or, in rewritten form:

$$F_{i+1} < F_i$$

548 So LINK-GROUND guarantees that every linking sequence is a ground se-  
 549 quence. Together, LINK-GROUNDED and LINK-GROUND entail that grounding  
 550 is either an empty relation—nothing grounds anything—or else there is an  
 551 infinitely descending grounding sequence. Have we found a new example of  
 552 an infinitely descending grounding sequence?

553 After criticising a pioneering recent discussion of these issues by Frugé  
 554 (2023), Kappes resourcefully motivates LINK-GROUND—a principle which  
 555 may not be *prima facie* compelling. This is one of the key contributions of  
 556 his paper. The other key contribution is his argument that despite being  
 557 well-motivated, LINK-GROUND ought to be rejected. (We slightly simplify  
 558 the argument again.) Kappes makes a strong case for the plausibility of the  
 559 following ( $<$  is full ground):

560 FULL-LINK. If  $f$  is partially grounded in  $\Gamma$  being a partial ground of  
 561  $f$ , then  $\Gamma$  is not a full ground of  $f$ .  
 562  $(\Gamma < f) < f$ , then not  $\Gamma < f$ .

563 The idea is that if links are grounds, then full grounds need to include these  
 564 links. But FULL-LINK is not compatible with LINK-GROUND. Assume that  
 565 LINK-GROUND holds also when the singular variable  $g$  is replaced by a plural  
 566 variable  $\Gamma$ , and assume further that ground is non-trivial in the sense that there  
 567 are  $\Gamma$  and  $f$  such that  $\Gamma < f$ . Then, since full grounds are partial grounds,  $\Gamma <$   
 568  $f$ . By the generalised form of LINK-GROUND,  $(\Gamma < f) < f$ . With FULL-LINK,  
 569 it follows that not  $\Gamma < f$ , contradicting our assumption.

570 **FULL-LINK** raises interesting questions for further research. It is of the  
 571 general form of an *exclusion principle* for ground, analogous to exclusion  
 572 principles that have received a great deal of discussion in connection with  
 573 mental causation. Such principles are of the form: if  $\Gamma$  is a ground of  $f$ , then  
 574 nothing can be a ground of  $f$  unless it is suitably related to  $\Gamma$ . Of course,  
 575 the suitable relation needs to be spelled out. It is well known that since  
 576 disjunctive facts may have independent full grounds, formulating tenable  
 577 exclusion principles for ground is not straightforward.

578 The completion of this special issue marks the end of the Swiss National  
 579 Science Foundation research project “Being without Foundations.” One of  
 580 the project aims had been to offer a taxonomy of different varieties of founda-  
 581 tionalism and anti-foundationalism. The first part of this introduction has  
 582 presented relevant building blocks. The summaries of the five articles in the  
 583 second part of the introduction point towards a reason why an exhaustive  
 584 taxonomy is not yet to be had at this stage of the debate. As we have seen, the  
 585 relevant theoretical options depend on a range of background assumptions:  
 586 about how metaphysical analysis is to be understood (Janssen-Lauret), how  
 587 possibility facts are established (O’Conaill and Pearson), whether ground  
 588 is linked to explanation (Şimşek), whether metaphysical laws are among  
 589 grounds or separate from them (Billon), and whether grounds exclude each  
 590 other (Kappes). The project question has turned out to be more open-ended  
 591 than anticipated. If this special issue has pointed towards new ways of tackling  
 592 it, it will have achieved its aim.\*

593 Stephan Leuenberger

594  0000-0002-4993-2816

595 University of Glasgow

596 Stephan.Leuenberger@glasgow.ac.uk

## 597 References

- 598 BARNES, Elizabeth. 2018. “Symmetric Dependence.” in *Reality and its Structure: Essays*  
 599 *in Fundamentality*, edited by Ricki Leigh BLISS and Graham PRIEST, pp. 50–69.  
 600 Oxford: Oxford University Press, doi:10.1093/oso/9780198755630.003.0003.
- 601 BENNETT, Karen. 2017. *Making Things Up*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, doi:10.1  
 602 093/oso/9780199682683.001.0001.

---

\* Thanks to Philipp Blum, Fabrice Correia, and Steph Rennick for comments on a draft and to Bruno Whittle for conversations about some of this material. The research has been supported by the Swiss National Science Foundation grant no. 182847.

- 603 BLISS, Ricki Leigh and PRIEST, Graham. 2018. "The Geography of Fundamentality:  
604 An Overview." in *Reality and its Structure: Essays in Fundamentality*, edited by  
605 Ricki Leigh BLISS and Graham PRIEST, pp. 1–34. Oxford: Oxford University Press,  
606 doi:10.1093/oso/9780198755630.003.0001.
- 607 CALOSI, Claudio and MORGANTI, Matteo. 2021. "Interpreting Quantum Entangle-  
608 ment: Steps towards Coherentist Quantum Mechanics." *The British Journal for the*  
609 *Philosophy of Science* 72(3): 865–891, doi:10.1093/bjps/axy064.
- 610 CAMERON, Ross P. 2022. *Chains of Being: Infinite Regress, Circularity, and Metaphysical*  
611 *Explanation*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, doi:10.1093/oso/9780198854272.00  
612 1.0001.
- 613 CORREIA, Fabrice. 2010. "Grounding and Truth-Functions." *Logique et Analyse* 53(211):  
614 251–279, <https://logiqueetanalyse.be/archive/issues87-220/LA211/02correia.pdf>.  
615 —. 2021. "Fundamentality from Grounding Trees." *Synthese* 199(3): 5965–5994, doi:10  
616 .1007/s11229-021-03054-2.
- 617 DEROSSET, Louis. 2017. "Grounding the Unreal." *Philosophy and Phenomenological*  
618 *Research* 95(3): 535–563, doi:10.1111/phpr.12437.
- 619 DIXON, Scott. 2016. "What is the Well-Foundedness of Grounding?" *Mind* 125(498):  
620 439–468, doi:10.1093/mind/fzv112.
- 621 —. 2020. "Infinite Descent." in *The Routledge Handbook of Metaphysical Grounding*,  
622 edited by Michael J. RAVEN, pp. 244–258. Routledge Handbooks in Philosophy.  
623 London: Routledge, doi:10.4324/9781351258845-23.
- 624 —. 2023. "Metaphysical Foundherentism." *Synthese* 201(3): 86, doi:10.1007/s11229-  
625 023-04053-1.
- 626 EPSTEIN, Brian. 2015. *The Ant Trap: Rebuilding the Foundations of the Social Sciences*.  
627 Oxford: Oxford University Press, doi:10.1093/acprof:oso/9780199381104.001.0001.
- 628 FINE, Kit. 2012. "Guide to Ground." in *Metaphysical Grounding: Understanding*  
629 *the Structure of Reality*, edited by Fabrice CORREIA and Benjamin  
630 Sebastian SCHNIEDER, pp. 37–80. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press,  
631 doi:10.1017/cbo9781139149136.002.
- 632 FRUGÉ, Christopher. 2023. "Janus-Faced Grounding." *Ergo* 10(34): 968–991, doi:10.3  
633 998/ergo.4664.
- 634 GIANNOTTI, Joaquim. 2021. "Fundamental Yet Grounded." *Theoria* 87(3): 578–599,  
635 doi:10.1111/theo.12293.
- 636 HALL, Ned. 2000. "Causation and the Price of Transitivity." *The Journal of Philosophy*  
637 97(4): 198–222, doi:10.2307/2678390.
- 638 HAWLEY, Katherine. 2019. "Comments on Epstein (2015)." *Inquiry* 62(2): 217–229,  
639 doi:10.1080/0020174X.2017.1289694.
- 640 KEARNS, Stephen. 2011. "Can a Thing Be Part of Itself?" *American Philosophical*  
641 *Quarterly* 48(1): 87–93.
- 642 KRIPKE, Saul A. 1980. *Naming and Necessity*. Oxford: Basil Blackwell Publishers.



- 643 LEWIS, David. 1973. "Causation." *The Journal of Philosophy* 70(17): 556–567. Reprinted,  
644 with a postscript (Lewis 1986b), in Lewis (1986a, 159–172), doi:10.2307/2025310.
- 645 —. 1976. "The Paradoxes of Time Travel." *American Philosophical Quarterly* 13(2):  
646 145–152. Reprinted in Lewis (1986a, 67–80).
- 647 —. 1983. "New Work for a Theory of Universals." *Australasian Journal of Philosophy*  
648 61(4): 343–377. Reprinted in Lewis (1999, 8–55), doi:10.1080/00048408312341131.
- 649 —. 1986a. *Philosophical Papers, Volume 2*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, doi:10.109  
650 3/0195036468.001.0001.
- 651 —. 1986b. "Postscript to Lewis (1973)." in *Philosophical Papers, Volume 2*, pp. 172–213.  
652 Oxford: Oxford University Press, doi:10.1093/0195036468.003.0006.
- 653 —. 1999. *Papers in Metaphysics and Epistemology*. Cambridge: Cambridge University  
654 Press, doi:10.1017/cbo9780511625343.
- 655 LITLAND, Jon Erling. 2018. "Bicollective Ground: Towards a (Hyper)Graphic Account."  
656 in *Reality and its Structure: Essays in Fundamentality*, edited by Ricki Leigh BLISS  
657 and Graham PRIEST, pp. 140–164. Oxford: Oxford University Press, doi:10.1093/  
658 oso/9780198755630.003.0008.
- 659 LOSS, Roberto. 2016. "Grounds, Roots and Abysses." *Thought* 5(1): 41–52, doi:10.1002/  
660 tht3.192.
- 661 MCKENZIE, Kerry. 2011. "Arguing Against Fundamentality." *Studies in History and*  
662 *Philosophy of Science. Part B: Studies in History and Philosophy of Modern Physics*  
663 42(4): 244–255, doi:10.1016/j.shpsb.2011.09.002.
- 664 RABIN, Gabriel Oak and RABERN, Brian. 2016. "Well Founding Grounding Grounding."  
665 *Journal of Philosophical Logic* 45(4): 349–379, doi:10.1007/s10992-015-9376-4.
- 666 RAVEN, Michael J. 2015. "Ground." *Philosophy Compass* 10(5): 322–333, doi:10.1111/  
667 phc3.12220.
- 668 —. 2016. "Fundamentality without Foundations." *Philosophy and Phenomenological*  
669 *Research* 93(3): 607–626, doi:10.1111/phpr.12200.
- 670 SCHAFFER, Jonathan. 2012. "Grounding, Transitivity, and Contrastivity." in *Metaphys-  
671 ical Grounding: Understanding the Structure of Reality*, edited by Fabrice CORREIA  
672 and Benjamin Sebastian SCHNIEDER, pp. 122–138. Cambridge: Cambridge Uni-  
673 versity Press, doi:10.1017/cbo9781139149136.005.
- 674 —. 2017. "The Ground Between the Gaps." *Philosophers' Imprint* 17(11), [http://hdl.ha  
675 ndle.net/2027/spo.3521354.0017.011](http://hdl.handle.net/2027/spo.3521354.0017.011).
- 676 SIDER, Theodore. 2011. *Writing the Book of the World*. Oxford: Oxford University Press,  
677 doi:10.1093/acprof:oso/9780199697908.001.0001.
- 678 SIMONS, Peter M. 1987. *Parts: A Study in Ontology*. Oxford: Oxford University Press,  
679 doi:10.1093/acprof:oso/9780199241460.001.0001.
- 680 THOMPSON, Naomi Margaret Claire. 2016. "Metaphysical Interdependence." in *Reality  
681 Making*, edited by Mark JAGO, pp. 38–56. Mind Association Occasional Series.  
682 Oxford: Oxford University Press, doi:10.1093/acprof:oso/9780198755722.003.0003.

- 683 VARZI, Achille C. 2016. "Mereology." in *The Stanford Encyclopedia of Philosophy*. Stan-  
684 ford, California: The Metaphysics Research Lab, Center for the Study of Language  
685 and Information, [https://plato.stanford.edu/archives/spr2016/entries/mereolog](https://plato.stanford.edu/archives/spr2016/entries/mereology/)  
686 [y/](https://plato.stanford.edu/archives/spr2016/entries/mereology/).
- 687 WERNER, Jonas. 2021. "A Grounding-Based Measure of Relative Fundamentality."  
688 *Synthese* 198(10): 9721–9737, doi:10.1007/s11229-020-02676-2.

PROOF

# Susan Stebbing on Well-Foundedness

FREDERIQUE JANSSEN-LAURET

Susan Stebbing’s metaphysical method of directional analysis led her to query the assumption that reality must be well-founded and analysis must terminate in simples. If this is true, she argued, it is a contingent claim about how reality is constituted, not an analytic or logically necessary truth. I present an interpretation of Stebbing’s views about well-foundedness, linking her metaphysics to her philosophy of physics. My interpretation evinces that Stebbing did not, as some scholars maintain, abandon directional analysis in the mid-1930s. Instead, she applied it in her philosophy of physics. Stebbing’s metaphysical method, I argue, differs in key respects from truth-making, to which it has been compared, and from grounding. Stebbing’s metaphysics combines illuminating remarks on well-foundedness with interesting arguments against grounding, which could usefully inform the present-day debate.

Susan Stebbing (1885–1943), until very recently neglected by both historians of analytic philosophy and present-day philosophers, is beginning to be recognized as an important analytic philosopher in her own right (Chapman 2013; Beaney 2016; Janssen-Lauret 2017; Coliva 2021; West 2022), even as a “founding mother” of analytic philosophy (Janssen-Lauret 2024). Here I lay out Stebbing’s arguments against the assumption that reality is well-founded, which was commonly held in the early phase of analytic philosophy. Her arguments rest partly on her innovative metaphysical method, using her directional analysis, and partly on her philosophy of physics. I argue that Stebbing’s arguments indicate that she did not abandon directional analysis as is commonly held but continued to apply it in her philosophy of physics, and that her arguments still have much to teach us in the twenty-first century.

The canonical “founding fathers” of analytic philosophy, Moore, Russell, and Wittgenstein, all shared at one time or another an assumption that reality is well-founded, that analysis will terminate in simples. Stebbing revealed this assumption to be far shakier than previously supposed by making use of her sharp distinction between “same-level” analysis and “metaphysical” or

720 “directional” analysis. She argued that while same-level analysis of language  
721 in terms of more language may often be analytic or a priori, metaphysical  
722 analysis never is. In doing metaphysical analysis, we are concerned with  
723 finding out what constituents of reality, in which arrangement, there are in  
724 the world if the sentence is true (Stebbing 1932a, 78–80). This can never be  
725 an analytic, logically true, or a priori matter because it makes a demand on  
726 reality. Reality may or may not be as described. Therefore, we cannot assume  
727 that analysis will terminate in simples; this is not a logical, analytic, or a priori  
728 truth but one which is beholden to reality being a certain way. It may be false.

729 Stebbing drew upon her philosophy of physics to argue that we cannot  
730 write off metaphysical analyses just because they sound “paradoxical” (Moore  
731 1925, 54), analytically false, or counterintuitive, nor embrace them because  
732 they sound intuitive. Modern physics is full of counterintuitive analyses, such  
733 as “this solid table is, at the subatomic level, mostly empty space,” which we  
734 nevertheless have to accept as true. Philosophical analysis has to fit around  
735 the findings of physics, not dismiss them. In this way, Stebbing’s metaphysics  
736 made a key advance on Moore’s. She also argued that the new physics tends  
737 to suggest arguments against the kind of well-foundedness assumed by the  
738 logical atomism of Wittgenstein, whom she interpreted as falling into a form  
739 of methodological solipsism at odds with the methods of physics (Stebbing  
740 1933a) and of Russell, who held that analysis terminates in simples with  
741 which we are acquainted, a physical impossibility for some subatomic particles  
742 (Stebbing 1932a, 72; 1937, 181).

743 Having explained Stebbing’s metaphysics and her proposal regarding the  
744 question of well-foundedness, I then compare it to the contemporary range  
745 of options on offer and conclude that Stebbing’s proposal fares quite well  
746 and remains a viable option for us today. Although Stebbing’s metaphysical  
747 analysis is sometimes compared to truth-making (Egerton 2021), I argue  
748 the resemblance is somewhat superficial because truth-making customarily  
749 involves some form of determination or necessity. Stebbing, by contrast,  
750 did not believe in bespoke metaphysical relations such as determination or  
751 metaphysical necessity.

752 Stebbing’s metaphysical analysis might alternatively be read as analysing  
753 a fact in terms of further facts, in terms of further facts, *et cetera*, and compared  
754 to grounding, with which it shares a chain-like structure. Yet Stebbing  
755 spoke out against several argumentative strategies and posits widely embraced  
756 by grounding theorists. She argued against the use of “What is it to  
757 be a so-and-so?” questions both in metaphysics and in philosophy of science

(Stebbing 1932a, 74–75), against essentialist assumptions and modal discourse involving necessary truth or intensions (Stebbing 1930a, 28, 433), and against reliance on determinative relations in science (Stebbing 1930a, 392–394), in ways that could usefully inform present-day debates. She would also have rejected monism-based solutions to the problem of well-foundedness because she argued that the assumptions that there are multiple perceiving minds and multiple things perceived distinct from the observer are baked into both physics and philosophy from their inception (Stebbing 1929; 1937, 108). Although it is not a logical truth, ontological pluralism cannot in practice be intelligibly denied, according to Stebbing.

In Stebbing’s view, there is a chain-like structure to be found in metaphysical analysis, but it does not relate grounded facts to grounds. It relates higher levels of logical construction to lower levels. If we find out that there is a level of non-constructed, basic facts, then we will have discovered that metaphysical analysis is well-founded. But whether it is or not is neither a matter of logic, conceptual analysis, nor of metaphysics, but of empirical discovery.

## 774 **Early Analytic Philosophy and the Assumption That** 775 **Reality Is Well-Founded**

776 Stebbing was in many respects an archetypal early analytic philosopher. She  
777 wrote in detail about the method of analysis (e.g., Stebbing 1932a). She tended  
778 to favour anti-idealism. She sought to build a philosophy fit for the twenti-  
779 eth century and beyond around the deliverances of modern physics and  
780 mathematics. Yet Stebbing differed from her colleagues Moore, Russell, and  
781 Wittgenstein in consistently questioning the well-foundedness of reality.

782 One key logical atomist argument for well-foundedness rests on the assump-  
783 tion that sense-data play an important role in analysis. Although Stebbing  
784 framed her objections to this style of argument as disagreement with Rus-  
785 sell, I argue that they plainly also constitute both disagreement with Moore  
786 and progress compared to Moore, thus throwing into doubt the prevailing  
787 “Moorean” interpretation of Stebbing’s metaphysics.<sup>1</sup>

788 Both Moore and Russell had held, from their very early works (Moore 1899;  
789 Russell 1903) that some sort of well-foundedness assumption was necessary in

---

1 For the interpretation that regards Stebbing as “Moorean,” see Milkov (2003, 355, 358); Beaney (2016, 242, 245–246, 248–250, 253–254). For criticism of the “Moorean” interpretation, see Janssen-Lauret (2022a, 2022b, forthcoming).

790 order to defeat idealism. They sought to falsify idealism by means of a theory  
791 of perception and cognition that sharply separated the mind from its object  
792 of judgement, external to that mind (MacBride 2018, 30–39). The two young  
793 philosophers aimed to refute both the epistemic idealism of Kant and the  
794 idiosyncratic ontological idealism of Bradley by maintaining that, *contra* Kant  
795 and Bradley, reality divides into discrete, individually cognisable constituents,  
796 and that we know this because our minds can grasp those constituents directly,  
797 and our words can name them directly. In subsequent years, Moore  
798 and Russell’s views evolved away from their early all-words-refer model and  
799 towards the more familiar logical atomist model on which a true sentence  
800 corresponds to a fact and a false sentence fails to do so. Yet both philosophers  
801 remained committed to the position that we can grasp and name at least  
802 some constituents of reality directly. They referred to these constituents as  
803 “sense-data.”

804 Moore was explicitly open-minded concerning the nature of sense-data. He  
805 considered the possibility that they might be the surfaces of objects (Moore  
806 1925, 56), as well as the possibility that they might be mental items. Either  
807 way, Moore held, they were pivotal to analysis. Material objects, such as hands,  
808 he took to be analysable in terms of the sense-data directly presented to us  
809 (Moore 1925, 55–59).

810 Russell had similarly put forward a strong version of this type of view  
811 when he proposed that the process of analysis must terminate in a sched-  
812 ule of sense-data (and universals) to which we have direct cognitive access:  
813 “Every proposition which we can understand must be composed wholly of  
814 constituents with which we are acquainted” (1911, 117). By holding on tightly  
815 to that view, Russell held, we are able to ward off the kind of idealism ac-  
816 cording to which “we never really, in knowledge, attain to the things we are  
817 supposed to be knowing about, but only to the ideas of those things” (1911,  
818 120), because sense-data are indubitable. We cannot be wrong about knowing  
819 them. If sense-data are the simples which we know directly and in which  
820 analysis terminates, we are on epistemological *terra firma*.

821 We are all familiar with the problem of epistemic access to unobservable  
822 posits of the natural sciences. The same problem occurs for epistemic access  
823 to abstract objects such as sets, numbers, logical properties, and functions for  
824 those who posit such entities. But even ordinary material objects, animals,  
825 plants, rocks, stars, planets, and artefacts, according to Moore, Russell, and  
826 Wittgenstein, are not presented to us directly but only via the medium of sense-  
827 data. Whether sense-data are themselves the surfaces of such objects or mental

828 representations of them, belief in material objects such as human bodies or  
829 tables then appears to be the result of a risky inference. The classic logical  
830 atomist solution, which Stebbing called “Russell’s reformulation of Occam’s  
831 Razor” (Stebbing 1932a, 75; 1933a, 25), was that “logical constructions are to  
832 be substituted for inferred entities” (Stebbing 1933a, 25). We cannot observe  
833 the table directly. But, Stebbing wrote, “it is nonsense to talk of this table as  
834 an ‘inferred entity’; hence, they [Russell and his followers] conclude, it must  
835 be a logical construct of the given,” that is, of sense-data (Stebbing 1933a, 25).

836 Stebbing took Wittgenstein to share this Russellian assumption but to stray  
837 into even more unpalatable conclusions because, she wrote, “Wittgenstein  
838 simply takes it for granted that the given is, and could be, nothing but my own  
839 direct experience” (Stebbing 1933a, 27). As a result, “every genuine proposition  
840 says, and can say, only something about my present or my future experience”  
841 (Stebbing 1933a, 27). So Wittgenstein was, Stebbing concluded, forced into  
842 “methodological solipsism” (Stebbing 1933a, 27). This conclusion she took  
843 to be confirmed by Wittgenstein’s statement that “what solipsism means is  
844 quite correct, only it cannot be said” (Wittgenstein 1922, 5.62). Stebbing’s  
845 interpretation of Wittgenstein is controversial. Anscombe’s influential read-  
846 ing, for example, presents Wittgenstein as more realist than Stebbing does  
847 (Anscombe 1959). I will not assess Stebbing’s interpretation of Wittgenstein  
848 here; her arguments remain valuable even if she was incorrect to single out  
849 the early Wittgenstein as her foil.

850 While Russell denied solipsism, other minds were, on his view, also firmly  
851 in the realm of things which we cannot observe directly. He wrote,

852       If a person who knew Bismarck made a judgment about him [...,  
853       w]hat this person was acquainted with were certain sense-data  
854       which he connected (rightly, we will suppose) with Bismarck’s  
855       body. His body as a physical object, and still more his mind, were  
856       only known as the body and the mind connected with these sense-  
857       data. (Russell 1911, 114)

858 Stebbing, we shall see, took a different view.

## 852 **Stebbing against Well-Foundedness: The Distinction** 860 **between Same-Level and Metaphysical Analysis**

861 Like her logical atomist colleagues, Stebbing took one of the main tasks of  
 862 philosophy to be the clarification of our beliefs and our ordinary-language  
 863 discourse through philosophical analysis. She further resembled them in  
 864 positing facts with particulars and universals as constituents, although she also  
 865 took Whitehead's event ontology seriously as an alternative. But Stebbing's  
 866 theory of philosophical analysis differed in key respects from those of Russell,  
 867 Wittgenstein, and Moore. She rejected the idea that analysis terminates in  
 868 sense-data. She questioned whether we have good reason to believe that some  
 869 ultimate level of basic facts will be uncovered. She held that what we analyse  
 870 are sentences, not propositions or judgements. And she made an advance over  
 871 all of the "founding fathers" by drawing her distinction between same-level  
 872 and metaphysical analysis and applying it in her metaphysics and philosophy  
 873 of physics.

874 Stebbing's original views on analysis entail that we cannot expect reality  
 875 to simply offer up a basic level of simples or simple facts in which analysis  
 876 terminates. The existence of simples, or basic facts, is, she argued, not a logical  
 877 or *a priori* truth. If it is a truth at all, it is one ascertained by inspection of  
 878 the world. Unlike Russell, Moore, and Wittgenstein, Stebbing distinguished  
 879 explicitly between metaphysical analysis, which she also called "directional  
 880 analysis," and same-level analysis.

881 Same-level analysis analyses a stretch of language in terms of more language.  
 882 As a result, such analysis remains at the same level of logical construction:  
 883 the high-level logical construct of language. Stebbing considered linguistic  
 884 items such as words and sentences to be logical constructs out of tokens  
 885 that are typographically or phonetically similar or conventionally associated  
 886 with each other (Stebbing 1935, 9). Analysis of language in terms of more  
 887 language—such as conceptual analysis, definition, or analytic explication—  
 888 may well be *a priori*, analytic, or based on synonymy. Metaphysical analysis,  
 889 according to Stebbing, never is. Metaphysical analysis is concerned not with  
 890 synonymy or analyticity but with uncovering what schedule of facts, what  
 891 constituents in what arrangement, there is if a given sentence is true. It re-  
 892 quires co-operation from reality. Reality may or may not contain the relevant  
 893 schedule of facts. The claims "analysis terminates in simples," "there are basic  
 894 facts," or "analysis terminates in sense-data" are by no means ungainsayable



895 or logical truths. They can be coherently denied: “that there should be basic  
896 facts [is] not logically necessary” (Stebbing 1932a, 80).

897 Stebbing presented her theory of metaphysical analysis as disagreement  
898 with Russell. She framed it as an improvement on his “unfortunate reformu-  
899 lation of Occam’s Razor” (Stebbing 1932a, 75)—according to which we  
900 should replace inferred entities with logical constructions—and tentatively  
901 claimed some affinity with Moore, while noting that Moore did not use the  
902 term “metaphysical analysis” and might not agree with her views (Stebbing  
903 1932a, 76, n.1). As a result, some Stebbing scholars have designated her view  
904 as “analysis practiced by Moore-Stebbing” (Milkov 2003, 358, 359) or as a  
905 “Moorean conception of analysis” (Beaney 2016, 249, 250). It can nevertheless  
906 be made apparent, I argue, that Stebbing’s metaphysical analysis is distinct  
907 from Moore’s analysis of propositions and that she was able to solve problems  
908 that Moore could not. Although Moore (and Russell) did not intend only to  
909 engage in same-level analysis but aimed to uncover “the nature of [...] things”  
910 (Moore 1925, 55), Moore, unlike Stebbing, failed to keep metaphysical and  
911 same-level analysis sufficiently separate, landing himself in a muddle, which  
912 Stebbing managed to swerve.

913 Moore, in his “Defence of Common Sense,” had started off with a strongly  
914 anti-idealist message but found himself stymied in the final pages, unable  
915 to rule out an idealist analysis of “this is a hand.” He took for granted that  
916 any such analysis begins with “This is part of the surface of a human hand,”  
917 a statement that he took to be “undoubtedly a proposition about the sense-  
918 datum, which I am seeing” (Moore 1925, 55). Moore considered three analyses:  
919 one according to which the hand is a logical construction out of physical sense-  
920 data, the surfaces of objects; one according to which it is a construction out  
921 of sense-data conceived as mental representations of the material hand; and  
922 one according to which it is a construction out of “permanent possibilities  
923 of sensation” (Moore 1925, 57)—an idealist analysis à la Mill. Moore argued  
924 the first was unable to account for double vision, the second relied on the  
925 mysterious relation of “being an appearance of,” and then found himself  
926 in a kind of aporia, unable to rule out the intuitively unappealing idealist  
927 analysis, which he deplored as “paradoxical” (Moore 1925, 59). Although he  
928 never explained why he found it paradoxical, I hypothesise that he felt that  
929 our common-sense practice of calling hands “material things” (Moore 1925,  
930 42) was at odds with the idealist analysis of hands, since items composed of

931 permanent possibilities of sensation would appear to be mental rather than  
 932 material things.<sup>2</sup>

933 Stebbing's metaphysical analysis improved upon Moorean analysis by  
 934 swiftly defanging the apparent paradox. On Stebbing's view, an analysis that  
 935 has a paradoxical sound to it is problematic only if the analysis in question is  
 936 a same-level analysis, capturing some form of synonymy or analyticity. Meta-  
 937 physical analyses may be perfectly viable even though they sound analytically  
 938 false. A good example is the physical analysis that matter is, at the sub-atomic  
 939 level, mostly empty space.

940 Although Stebbing did not press the above point against Moore, she could  
 941 have done so because she made a comparable move in her rebuttals of idealism  
 942 in the interpretation of physics. Stebbing's expertise in the philosophy of  
 943 science had made her well aware of paradoxical-sounding analyses in physics,  
 944 such as "this solid table is, at the subatomic level, mostly empty space." It  
 945 would be fallacious to expect a macro-object, or a logical construct, to inherit  
 946 all the properties of its micro-constituents, or vice versa (Stebbing 1937, 48–54).  
 947 Just as an acceptable analysis of a dependable physical table may take it to be  
 948 mostly empty space at the subatomic level, and this analysis does not imply  
 949 that the table itself is not solid, so could we theoretically conclude that a hand  
 950 is, at the level of basic facts, made of permanent possibilities of sensation, and  
 951 this analysis does not imply that the hand itself is not material. There may not  
 952 be much that can positively be said in favour of the idealist analysis of hands  
 953 or other material things, and this was indeed the line Stebbing took. But that  
 954 is a separate issue, to be settled by an investigation of reality. The paradoxical  
 955 appearance of the idealist analysis is not by itself sufficient reason to dismiss  
 956 it as a metaphysical analysis.

957 Stebbing further differed from Moore as well as from Russell and Wittgen-  
 958 stein in dispensing with the central role allocated to sense-data in analysis.

---

2 An anonymous referee asks whether I read Moore as holding that idealist analyses are incoherent, citing Moore's posthumously published 1928–29 lectures as a counterexample to that reading (Moore 1966, 19), and suggesting that Stebbing is closer to Moore here than I think she is. But I read Moore's description of the idealist analysis as "paradoxical" in (1925) not as ascribing incoherence to the idealist analysis—if that were the case, then Moore would not have found himself unable to rule out the "paradoxical" analysis; he could have dismissed it as illogical—but as connoting that the analysis has an air of analytic falsehood about it. Stebbing, on my interpretation, effectively dispatches the apparent paradox by showing that the idealist analysis need not be false since metaphysical analyses need not be analytically true. Elsewhere, I argue that Stebbing's views on the analysis of physical objects also make an advance over Moore's 1928–29 lectures (Janssen-Lauret forthcoming).

959 She explicitly rejected Russell's claim that, as she put it, "a *table* is a *class*  
960 of appearances" (Stebbing 1933b, 503). We have seen that Moore, too, while  
961 not requiring that we view material objects as classes of sense-data, still felt  
962 that the process of analysis should have its roots in the type of claim that is  
963 "undoubtedly a proposition about the sense-datum" (Moore 1925, 55). But  
964 Stebbing's metaphysical method was different: "We must not start from sense-  
965 data" (Stebbing 1932a, 72). According to her theory of perception, we are not  
966 simply directly presented with sense-data but thrown into a perceptual situa-  
967 tion of determinate shades, sounds, smells, *et cetera*. Whenever we start to  
968 label individual surfaces or mental states, we have already started the process  
969 of generalisation and abstraction in some minor way. Thus, Stebbing wrote,  
970 "we must start from the perceptual judgment, made in a given determinate  
971 perceptual situation" (Stebbing 1932a, 72) when we engage in metaphysical  
972 analysis.

973 Stebbing was not averse to regarding certain posits as logical constructions,  
974 such as classes (Stebbing 1930a, 455), linguistic types (Stebbing 1935), and  
975 propositions (Stebbing 1933d, 78). She described going back and forth on the  
976 question whether tables and other apparently observable things are logical  
977 constructions (Stebbing 1933d, 2). Although she on balance felt that tables  
978 count as logical constructions, she objected to the view that they are logical  
979 constructions out of sense-data. We may say that tables are immediate refer-  
980 ents of discourse about perceptual situations. We then enter into a process  
981 of abstraction to analyse what they are made of. They turn out to be made,  
982 ultimately, of subatomic particles: the basic facts referred to by sentences  
983 about tables are micro-physical ones (Stebbing 1937, 54). Stebbing's views  
984 on perception were more akin to those of Whitehead, who, in describing  
985 the perceptual situation as an event, sought to overthrow the "bifurcation of  
986 nature" into primary and secondary qualities and into mind and body, than  
987 to those of Moore.

988 Stebbing's views on perception had grown out of her engagement with  
989 physics and its philosophy. In a relatively early paper, she defended a position  
990 she called "realism," according to which both philosophy and the natural  
991 sciences start from "perceptual science" (Stebbing 1929, 147), comprising  
992 statements such as "I am perceiving a piece of paper," "the piece of paper was  
993 here before I saw it," and "others have seen this piece of paper, too." Stebbing's  
994 perceptual science explicitly encompasses physics as well as philosophy. It  
995 takes it as a given that perceptual objects have a duration and that other minds  
996 exist and can perceive the same objects. That other minds are not things to be

997 known only by means of risky inference or logical construction, she appears to  
 998 have taken as a clear and basic feature of the scientific method. Later, she was  
 999 to criticise Eddington, for example, for thinking that “the inquiry concerning  
 1000 the nature of an other mind (called ‘Mr. X’) ‘must take place in the domain  
 1001 of my own consciousness’ (Eddington 1928, 268)”; Stebbing countered, “The  
 1002 difficulty is that Mr. X—indeed an army of Mr. X’s—must be assumed if  
 1003 physics is to be possible” (Stebbing 1937, 109). Here we see her invoking her  
 1004 1929 proposal of “perceptual science,” which has reliance on the observations  
 1005 of other observers running all the way through the scientific method like a  
 1006 stick of rock.

1007 In the same vein, we may read Stebbing’s rebuttal of the methodological  
 1008 solipsism she attributed to Wittgenstein as harkening back to her (1929)  
 1009 perceptual science. Stebbing’s reply to the methodological solipsist is brief:  
 1010 “I have the best of grounds for denying solipsism, namely, that I *know* it to  
 1011 be false. You, who are listening to me, and enable me to speak in the plural  
 1012 *also* know it to be false” (Stebbing 1933a, 27). Although at this point she  
 1013 included a footnote to Moore, who, unlike Russell and Wittgenstein, also took  
 1014 the assumption of other minds to be basic, this position was really original  
 1015 with Stebbing herself. And, I argue, it derived from her consideration of the  
 1016 scientific method rather than from a “Moorean” sense that the denial of other  
 1017 minds is paradoxical. In 1929, she had relied on the principle “Other people  
 1018 besides myself have seen that piece of blotting paper” (Stebbing 1929, 1) as  
 1019 part of perceptual science, a pragmatically necessary assumption for progress  
 1020 in both physics and philosophy.

### 1023 **Stebbing’s Metaphysics and the Question of** 1022 **Well-Foundedness: Metaphysical Analysis Post-1934**

1023 We have seen that in Stebbing’s estimation, the question whether reality is  
 1024 well-founded cannot be settled *a priori* because neither well-foundedness nor  
 1025 its negation is a logical or conceptual truth.<sup>3</sup> Statements such as “there are  
 1026 simples” or “there are basic facts” can be coherently affirmed or denied. So  
 1027 can “analysis has no stopping point.” Same-level analysis, such as conceptual  
 1028 analysis, or analysis within a completely conventional or postulational system,

3 Chris Daly points out that statements about mathematical objects might provide a challenge to the principle at work here. Stebbing’s reply would have invoked a version of the no-class theory she endorsed, according to which sets and numbers are logical constructions (Stebbing 1930a, 158).

1029 will not help us answer the question of the well-foundedness of reality. How,  
1030 then, did Stebbing propose to answer it? Although the passages in which  
1031 Stebbing indicates what her answer would look like are compressed, I believe  
1032 that they contain promising material to inform the present-day debate.

1033 In brief, Stebbing's alternative answer was that if there are simples, they  
1034 have to be found in the world by means of the method of metaphysical analysis.  
1035 Stebbing's metaphysical method was somewhat naturalistic. She took physics  
1036 and philosophy to share the same starting point of "perceptual science." She  
1037 looked towards physics, rather than sense-data, to find out what hands and  
1038 tables were made of. Where Moore asserted that analysis begins with what is  
1039 "undoubtedly a proposition about the sense-datum" (Moore 1925, 55), and  
1040 Russell, though interested in the philosophy of physics, contended that a  
1041 table is a set of sense-data, Stebbing's examples of analysis tended towards  
1042 the physical: water is made of hydrogen and oxygen (Stebbing 1932a, 67),  
1043 matter is ultimately made of sub-atomic particles (Stebbing 1937, 48–51).  
1044 Instead of the analyses which she attributed to Russell and Wittgenstein,  
1045 respectively—taking a table to be "a class of appearances" (Stebbing 1933b,  
1046 502) or "an experience of mine" (Stebbing 1933a, 28)—Stebbing held that  
1047 tables ultimately consisted of quarks and leptons (Stebbing 1937, 54): some  
1048 quarks are arranged into protons, combine with electrons to form atoms, atoms  
1049 of various sorts combine to form molecules, arranged into cells, arranged into  
1050 cellulose fibres, arranged into planks, in turn arranged table-wise. The quarks'  
1051 proton-wise arrangements here play the role of basic facts. Evidently, their  
1052 playing this role is not a conceptual truth but an empirical discovery. She  
1053 also regularly drew upon examples of the analysis of socially constructed  
1054 entities in terms of natural entities: "The action of the Council is a logical  
1055 construction out of a set of facts each of which is a fact about one individual  
1056 member" (Stebbing 1930a, 504).

1057 Like Carnap and Russell, Stebbing felt that analytic philosophy had a role  
1058 to play in spelling out the implications of the increasingly structural theories  
1059 of the new Einsteinian physics, which yielded "a constructed system stated  
1060 in terms of imperceptibles, the system being such that it permits, under  
1061 certain conditions, of interpretation by reference to perceptual elements"  
1062 (Stebbing 1933d, 9). Stebbing expressed sympathy for the tradition of Pearson,  
1063 Mach, and Kirchoff, also embraced by Carnap, according to which "science  
1064 does not *explain* but *describe*" (Stebbing 1930a, 392). Yet she sought to refine  
1065 some of their rather crude pronouncements, since "a *complete* description  
1066 of natural motions [as Kirchoff proposed] is impossible, and if it were not

impossible it would be useless” (Stebbing 1930a, 393). Instead, a fruitful scientific theory takes the form of a “constructive description,” which provides fruitful abstractions and generalisations by “attending to certain properties of what there is in Nature, by constructing hypothetical entities (i.e. constructs) whose function is to aid in the correlation of what is sensibly observed, and by using whatever mathematical methods may serve to develop the correlation” (Stebbing 1937, 91).

Historians usually say that Stebbing abandoned metaphysical analysis, either after (1933d) (Chapman 2013, 94) or at least by (1939) (Beaney 2016, 253). On my interpretation, Stebbing did not abandon metaphysical analysis and, in fact, continued to apply it in her philosophy of physics.<sup>4</sup> It is true that in (1939) and in (1942), she disavowed the exact account of metaphysical analysis that she had given in (1932a). But, read closely, these disavowals are of the Russell-Moore well-foundedness assumption that analysis terminates in sense-data, not of the distinction between metaphysical and same-level analysis. Stebbing wrote, “I was protesting against the view that there is any problem of justifying inferences from sense-data to perceptual objects” (Stebbing 1939, 73). What she had abandoned by then was her (1932a) hope that Moore’s project might coincide with hers: “I did not then clearly see that Moore’s discussion was also entangled with epistemological problems” (Stebbing 1939, 73), as Russell’s had been. In her (1942) retrospective on Moore, Stebbing again made clear that Moorean analysis was, in her view, stymied by the well-foundedness assumption: “Moore certainly has suggested that the analysis must terminate in sets of propositions about sense-data [...] There seems to me to be no good reason for asserting that there are such” (Stebbing 1942, 527). Stebbing did, at times, express the worry whether metaphysical analysis without the well-foundedness assumption could be on sufficiently solid ground. But that did not stop her from apparently applying her method of metaphysical analysis in her philosophy of physics. Although she did not invoke it by name there, the analysis she deployed must be metaphysical analysis since it applies to statements that appear analytically false at the level of ordinary language.

Physicists such as Eddington had argued that the modern theory of subatomic particles meant that matter could no longer be viewed as solid. Stebbing argued that this inference relied on the fallacious assumption that predicates

4 For a fuller account of Stebbing’s applications of directional analysis in her philosophy of physics, see Janssen-Lauret (2022a, 32–44; 2022b; forthcoming).

1102 that apply to macro-physical objects also apply to their micro-physical com-  
1103 ponents, so that if a macro-object is hard and solid, all its constituents are  
1104 hard and solid. But such a principle, though it may have an analytically true  
1105 sound to it—just like Moore’s assumption that if a hand is material, its con-  
1106 stituent parts should be material—may be falsified in the case of physical and  
1107 metaphysical analysis. Indeed, Stebbing wrote, it is so falsified because “no  
1108 concepts drawn from the level of common-sense thinking are appropriate  
1109 to sub-atomic, i.e. microphysical, phenomena” (Stebbing 1937, 51). Instead,  
1110 “it would be more appropriate to say that the modern physicist no longer  
1111 believes that the table consists of solid atomic balls, than to say that ‘the table  
1112 no longer possesses solid reality’ ” (Stebbing 1937, 54).

1113 Stebbing’s opposition to Russell’s contention that “every proposition which  
1114 we can understand must be composed wholly of constituents with which we  
1115 are acquainted” (Russell 1911, 117) may also have derived from her under-  
1116 standing of physics. If physical simples are quarks or electrons—we know that  
1117 physical objects can be at least as small as this—then some physical simples  
1118 resist knowledge by acquaintance. As a matter of physics, we are unable to  
1119 observe electrons directly. Electrons are smaller than the wavelength of visible  
1120 light (Stebbing 1937, 181). So Stebbing knew that there were some simples,  
1121 arguably termini of metaphysical analysis as practiced in physics, with which  
1122 we cannot possibly be acquainted. This fact further confirmed her position  
1123 that analysis should not be expected to terminate in simples, which are the  
1124 objects of acquaintance.

1125 Though naturalistically oriented, Stebbing’s system was more metaphys-  
1126 ical than that of Carnap, whose *Aufbau* Stebbing admired but critiqued for  
1127 engaging only in same-level analysis (Stebbing 1933a, 1933d), or the later  
1128 self-professed naturalism of Quine. Quine would have agreed with Stebbing’s  
1129 dictum that “the metaphysician is not concerned to discover any new facts; he  
1130 does not add to the sum-total of human knowledge in the way in which the  
1131 natural scientist or the historian does” (Stebbing 1932a, 65). The Quinean nat-  
1132 uralist philosopher famously builds her philosophy around the deliverances  
1133 of the sciences instead of seeking to build a prior metaphysical foundation  
1134 for them, and so, too, for the Stebbingesque naturalist. But Stebbing made  
1135 clear that she regarded metaphysics as “a distinctive branch of philosophy”  
1136 (Stebbing 1932a, 65) with its own methods, though not with its own bespoke  
1137 metaphysical relations or facts.

1138 Stebbing set apart her own chosen method, the method of metaphysical  
1139 analysis, from other, more traditional methods in metaphysics, such as the

deductive method of Spinoza and McTaggart, which rests upon axioms (Stebbing 1932a, 66–67), and Aristotle’s methods (Stebbing 1930a, 432–434). Her own method of metaphysical analysis implies a metaphysics of levels. Her other term for metaphysical analysis, “directional analysis,” indicates that the process tends towards ever greater simplicity. Its goal is to “determine the elements and the mode of combination of those elements to which reference is made when any given true assertion is made” (Stebbing 1932a, 79). Stebbing’s metaphysics of levels can be precisely characterised; the language of “levels” is not metaphorical. The lowest level is the level of simples, if there are any, combining into basic facts. Higher levels represent increasing amounts of logical constructedness. Same-level analysis, as we have seen, connects stretches of language—high-level logical constructions out of language-tokens—to more language, remaining at the same level. So, although same-level analysis may be said to have a “direction” in the sense that, for example, the right-hand side of a definition elucidates the left-hand side, it is not directional analysis in Stebbing’s precise, technical sense of descending down the levels in search of greater simplicity.

Stebbing’s range of ontological categories was also greater than Quine’s. She had long accepted the existence of particulars and universals as basic, though admitting that Whitehead’s event ontology was a worthy alternative against which she could not offer any strong arguments (1925, 315–316). Stebbing posited facts, with universals and particulars as constituents, writing, “A configuration of elements is what is usually called *a fact*. To the *configuration* is due the unity of the fact; to the *elements* it is due that there is something to be configured” (Stebbing 1932a, 80, her italics).

#### 1162 **4 Analysis of Sentences vs. Analysis of Facts: Comparison** 1166 **with Recent Debates**

Stebbing’s metaphysics bears some resemblance to truth-maker theory, to which it has been compared (Egerton 2021). One obvious respect of resemblance between truth-making and metaphysical analysis is that both Stebbing and most truth-maker theorists posit facts whose constituents are particulars and what Stebbing sometimes called “characteristics,” namely properties or relations (Stebbing 1933d). The other respect of resemblance is Stebbing’s contention that what philosophers analyse are not concepts or things, but sentences. Unlike many present-day truth-maker theorists, Stebbing also denied



1175 that we analyse propositions in metaphysical analysis. Whether the truth-  
1176 bearers are sentences or propositions, the view that analysis has a truth-bearer  
1177 as a point of departure and ends with facts remains a striking commonality  
1178 between metaphysical analysis and truth-maker theory. Yet I will argue that  
1179 the surface-level similarity is, to an extent, deceptive.

1180 The proposal that we analyse sentences, as opposed to concepts or proposi-  
1181 tions, is one that Stebbing presented as a difference between her and Moore.  
1182 She wrote,

1183 I prefer to use somewhat different language from that used by  
1184 Moore [...] Where he speaks of “knowing what a proposition  
1185 means, in the sense of being able to give a correct analysis of its  
1186 meaning” I prefer to speak of “knowing the analysis of a sentence”  
1187 [...] I believe that what we analyse are expressions, of which sen-  
1188 tences are one kind; and that when we analyse a sentence express-  
1189 ing a proposition what we obtain is not another proposition but  
1190 another expression. (Stebbing 1933a, 9)

1191 We saw above that Russell, too, had spoken of “propositions,” but he used  
1192 “proposition” in a sense in which the contemporary debate uses “fact.” Steb-  
1193 bing, by contrast, wrote, “I think that a proposition is a logical construction  
1194 out of a set of facts in which someone is using a sentence to express what he  
1195 is truly or falsely judging.” As her propositions were not *sui generis* meaning-  
1196 entities residing in an abstract third realm, her use of the term is not precisely  
1197 Fregean, but it is clear that she did not use “proposition” in its Russellian  
1198 sense.

1199 Stebbing, then, bypassed propositions as meaning-entities in her meta-  
1200 physical analysis. She viewed metaphysical analysis as crucially involving  
1201 sentences and other linguistic expressions on the one hand and facts on the  
1202 other, writing, “Metaphysics is a systematic study concerned to show what  
1203 is the structure of the facts in the world to which reference is made, with  
1204 varying degrees of indirectness, whenever a true statement is made” by means  
1205 of a sentence (Stebbing 1932a, 65). Stebbing appears to have had in mind that  
1206 metaphysicians analyse sentences as used on a given occasion rather than  
1207 abstract sentence types. She noted frequently that sentences of the same type  
1208 may have different meanings on different occasions of use (Stebbing 1930a,  
1209 149).

1210 Although Stebbing’s system resembles modern truth-making theory in  
1211 positing the ontological categories of fact, particular, and universal, there are

1212 also striking differences. One is Stebbing's lack of reliance on modality or  
 1213 intensionality. In taking truth-bearers to be sentences rather than propositions,  
 1214 as well as in being devoid of any assumption of necessitation between sentence  
 1215 and fact, Stebbing's position resembles the views of Quine, Tarski, Goodman,  
 1216 and other mid-analytic extensionalists more than present-day truth-making  
 1217 theory. Note that the Stebbing quotation in the previous paragraph is entirely  
 1218 non-modal. It contains no "must" or "ought" or "necessarily." The same is  
 1219 true of her formulation of the aim of metaphysical analysis, to "determine the  
 1220 elements and the mode of combination of those elements to which reference  
 1221 is made when any given true assertion is made" (Stebbing 1932a, 79).

1222 These extensional formulations were neither a coincidence nor the result of  
 1223 an oversight on Stebbing's part. Apart from potential Humean scruples about  
 1224 the necessary connection between particular and universal in a fact (MacBride  
 1225 and Janssen-Lauret 2022, 83–84), Stebbing's position was largely compati-  
 1226 ble with Quinean-Tarskian extensionalism.<sup>5</sup> She consistently disavowed the  
 1227 ascription of metaphysical necessity to the world (Stebbing 1930a, 175–176,  
 1228 265–266, 433). Stebbing countenanced "logical necessity" (Stebbing 1930b,  
 1229 285) and the necessity of analytic truths (Stebbing 1933c, 193), but not, appar-  
 1230 ently, metaphysical necessity. She did not regard causation as necessitation,  
 1231 writing instead, in her chapter titled "Causality," "The question of necessity  
 1232 does not arise for the practical agent and cannot arise for the scientific inves-  
 1233 tigator until he has generalized from the particular instances so as to obtain  
 1234 the form *whenever X, then E*" (Stebbing 1930a, 265).

1235 The truth-maker theory of the late twentieth and early twenty-first century,  
 1236 in addition to positing propositions as truth-bearers and facts as truth-makers,  
 1237 also often posits a peculiarly metaphysical relation of truth-making. Accord-  
 1238 ing to these accounts, truth-making is necessitation (Armstrong 2004, 5), the  
 1239 relation in virtue of which something is true (Armstrong 1989, 88), or a link be-  
 1240 tween a fact and the essence of a truth-bearer (Lowe 2006, 203–210). Stebbing,  
 1241 by contrast, declined altogether to posit essences or bespoke metaphysical  
 1242 facts and relations: "metaphysics is not concerned with a distinctive region of  
 1243 fact" (Stebbing 1932a, 66). Stebbing's thesis that metaphysics does not have its  
 1244 own distinctive subject matter in conjunction with her moderate naturalism  
 1245 yielded the view that a modern, scientifically informed philosophy develops  
 1246 in tandem with modern science to dispense with notions of determinative

---

5 I have argued previously that Stebbing was a moderate extensionalist (Janssen-Lauret 2022a, 27–28). Her view was less radical than Quine and Tarski's, but she disavowed abstract intentions.

1247 explanation, necessitation, and essence.<sup>6</sup> Stebbing wrote, “Modern theories  
1248 of organic evolution have combined with modern theories of mathematics to  
1249 destroy the basis of the Aristotelian conception of essence” (Stebbing 1930a,  
1250 433).

1251 Although an account of truth-making as entailment (cf. MacBride 2013,  
1252 sec. 1.1), which Stebbing regarded as a primitive logical relation (Stebbing  
1253 1930a, 222), might in principle have been open to her, Stebbing did not take  
1254 that path. Instead, she affirmed that the entailment relation runs both from  
1255 truth-bearer to analysis and vice versa: “If  $\pi_1, \pi_2, \dots \pi_n$  is the analysis of  $p$ ,  
1256 then  $p$  entails and is entailed by  $\pi_1, \pi_2, \dots \pi_n$ ” (Stebbing 1932a, 85).

1257 Yet Stebbing’s text pulls in two different directions concerning the question  
1258 of what metaphysicians analyse. In addition to speaking of metaphysical  
1259 analysis as a relation between a sentence and an array of basic facts, she at  
1260 times also described it simply as an analysis of facts. For example, “At present  
1261 I shall use this expression [‘proposition’], but later I shall inquire whether the  
1262 analysandum may be regarded as a fact” (Stebbing 1932a, 77) and “I think  
1263 that metaphysics is primarily concerned with the analysis of facts; it is not  
1264 concerned with the analysis of things, though the special natural sciences  
1265 may be so concerned” (Stebbing 1932b, 310).

1266 The twenty-first-century reader might be tempted to draw a different compar-  
1267 ison here: that Stebbing’s metaphysical analysis is not like truth-making  
1268 but like grounding. Grounding is often taken to be a relation between a fact and  
1269 another fact or facts, which is asymmetric and transitive, and which can form  
1270 a chain-like structure with  $p$  being grounded in  $q$  being grounded in  $r$  and  $s$ .  
1271 Whether it is well-founded is a subject of debate (e.g., Dixon 2016). The truth-  
1272 making debate is largely unconcerned with questions of well-foundedness,  
1273 chain-like structures, and their logical properties, such as asymmetry or transi-  
1274 tivity. Truth-making need not be a one-one relation, with one truth-making  
1275 fact per proposition; logically molecular propositions might be made true  
1276 by sets or collections of atomic facts instead of by logically molecular facts.  
1277 Nevertheless, the truth-making relation is not generally thought to have a  
1278 chain-like structure (Fine 2001, 25). Metaphysical analysis, by contrast, does,  
1279 and Stebbing explicitly commented on it.

1280 There are some passages in Stebbing’s work that, in isolation, appear to  
1281 suggest that the question of well-foundedness might be fruitfully addressed

---

6 Hence also Stebbing’s statement that “the metaphysician is not concerned to discover any new facts” (Stebbing 1932a, 65); see section 3 above. I am grateful to an anonymous referee for encouraging me to discuss this connection more.

1282 by reading metaphysical analysis as a type of, or analogue of, grounding and  
 1283 bringing Stebbing's answers under the grounding umbrella. But I will argue  
 1284 that an interpretation of Stebbing in grounding terms cannot be maintained.  
 1285 Stebbing consistently argued against many of the metaphysical tools in the  
 1286 grounding theorist's arsenal: metaphysical determination, priority, essence,  
 1287 metaphysical "why"-questions in science, metaphysical ultimacy, and the  
 1288 metaphysical distinction between appearance and reality. What's more, several  
 1289 prominent grounding theorists compare analysis unfavourably to grounding,  
 1290 but I will show that from Stebbing's text we can extract a promising argument  
 1291 in favour of analysis over grounding.

1292 At first, the case in favour of reading Stebbing's metaphysical analysis as  
 1293 a grounding-analogue may seem strong based on certain passages. In the  
 1294 following, she appears to attribute a chain-like structure to an array of non-  
 1295 basic and basic facts:

1296 A fact  $F$  is based upon a fact  $F'$  when  $F$  cannot be unless  $F'$  is. If  $F$   
 1297 is based upon  $F'$ , then  $F$  contains a configured element  $F'$ . Since  
 1298 a simple fact contains no configured elements, it cannot itself be  
 1299 based upon any other fact. (Stebbing 1932a, 80)

1300 The immediate reference of a proposition is never a basic fact, but  
 1301 it is in conformity with usage to say that a proposition asserts a  
 1302 fact, and if the proposition be true there is an ultimate reference to  
 1303 basic facts. We cannot tell by simple inspection whether a proposi-  
 1304 tion is true or false, but we can determine the immediate reference  
 1305 of any proposition. A proposition is an assertion; an assertion en-  
 1306 tails a thinker, but the immediate reference of a true proposition  
 1307 does not depend upon its being asserted. Consequently, we must  
 1308 admit that there are non-basic facts. But non-basic facts are facts  
 1309 of a different kind from basic facts. (Stebbing 1932a, 81)

1310 Elsewhere, she commented on the logical properties of the chain relation, call-  
 1311 ing it "asymmetrical and transitive," properties that are also widely ascribed  
 1312 to the relation of grounding:

1313 I am in the habit of describing the analysis involved in metaphys-  
 1314 ical inquiry *directional* in order to contrast it with other forms of  
 1315 analysis, which may be circular. To say that the analysis of  $F$  is  
 1316 *directional* is to say that if  $F$  be analysed into  $a, b, c$ , then  $a, b, c$ ,

1317 are on a lower level than  $F$ ; and if  $a$  be analysed into  $a_1, a_2$ , then  
1318  $a_1, a_2$  are on a lower level than  $a$ . The relation of *being on a lower*  
1319 *level than* is clearly asymmetrical and transitive. To say that  $a$  is  
1320 on a lower level than  $F$  is to say that  $a$  is in some sense *simpler*  
1321 *than F*. (Stebbing 1932b, 311, n.4)

1322 She added that while metaphysical analysis is assumed to be well-founded,  
1323 assumed to terminate in simples, “there is a tendency to *assume* [i.e., without  
1324 argument] that an ultimate element is an absolutely simple element” (Stebbing  
1325 1932a, 89), but this, again, is an assumption that can be false because it is  
1326 not logically or conceptually necessary. Perhaps simples can be discovered or  
1327 encountered in the world. Stebbing found it “plausible” that “an *absolutely*  
1328 *specific* shade of colour, or taste, or sound, may be simple in the required  
1329 sense” (Stebbing 1932a, 91). Nevertheless, she wrote, that suggestion remains  
1330 logically contingent, beholden to what reality is actually like: “To assert that a  
1331 basic fact is an absolutely specific fact is to make a significant assertion about  
1332 the constitution of the world. It is not to make an assertion about synonymous  
1333 expressions. It may be false” (Stebbing 1932a, 89). She therefore worried that  
1334 it is uncertain whether, in circumstances where the field is dominated by the  
1335 well-foundedness assumption, we can do metaphysics at all. “Metaphysics  
1336 awaits its Galileo” (Stebbing 1932a, 93).

## 1337 5 Analysis of Facts in What Sense? Stebbing against 1338 Grounding

1339 A central claim of many versions of contemporary grounding theory is that we  
1340 certainly can do metaphysics, appealing to bespoke metaphysical grounding  
1341 or determination relations. Some are also explicit that this method is to be  
1342 preferred to analysis (Fine 2001; Berker 2018). But Stebbing would not have  
1343 awarded the founder of grounding the title of “metaphysical Galileo.” We have  
1344 seen that she opposed positing specifically metaphysical relations. She sup-  
1345 ported her claim that “metaphysics is not concerned with a distinctive region  
1346 of fact” (Stebbing 1932a, 66) with detailed arguments against the existence of  
1347 distinctively metaphysical determination relations.

1348 Canonical statements of the grounding project include “there is a primitive  
1349 metaphysical concept of reality” (Fine 2001, 1). Such statements also explicitly  
1350 trade on the contrast between appearance and reality (Fine 2012, 41). Stebbing

1351 objected that such metaphysical claims can neither be empirically supported  
1352 nor are they generally supported by sound metaphysical argument:

1353 The phrase “ultimate nature of reality” implies that reality has a  
1354 nature that is not apparent. “Ultimate” cannot here be so inter-  
1355 preted as to signify that which could be discovered by analysis or  
1356 by experimental observation. [Metaphysicians assume] the oppo-  
1357 sition of Reality to Appearance. It is important to ask what is the  
1358 nature of this opposition.

1359 Consider the opposition of a chemical compound to its con-  
1360 stituents. [...] Only a very muddled chemist could suppose  
1361 that hydrogen is more ultimate than water in any sense other  
1362 than “chemically more simple.” The case is quite otherwise,  
1363 however, with the opposition of the ultimate nature of reality  
1364 to its apparent nature. This distinction is not yielded by experi-  
1365 mental observation; it is not *yielded* at all. On the contrary the  
1366 philosopher who accepts the distinction *starts* from the ultimate.  
1367 (Stebbing 1932a, 67)

1368 Advocates of grounding would counter that they do have sound metaphysi-  
1369 cal argument to support their views, for example, via appeal to a “constitutive  
1370 conception of essence” (Fine 2012, 71), a conception going back to the Aris-  
1371 totelian roots of essentialism, free from the modern disease of conflating an  
1372 essence with a necessary property. Stebbing, who knew Aristotle’s text very  
1373 well, cannot be accused of conflating essence and necessity. Though correctly  
1374 describing Aristotelian essence in detail, Stebbing made clear that it did not  
1375 meet her standards of intelligibility.

1376 Aristotle’s notion of essence is difficult to understand. He nowhere  
1377 clearly explains it, but seems to take “essence” as a technical term  
1378 to be left undefined and by means of which he defines those  
1379 predicables that are to be contrasted with it. (Stebbing 1930a,  
1380 429–430)

1381 Stebbing’s standards for intelligibility in metaphysical explanation were  
1382 exacting. This is evident, for example, from her reflections on the use of  
1383 mereological composition terminology:

1384 It makes sense to say that lemonade is composed of lemon-juice,  
1385 water, and sugar. [...] It makes sense to say that water is composed

1386 of oxygen and hydrogen, although this is a different usage of  
1387 “composed of” from the usage in the statement about lemonade.  
1388 [...] But what meaning can be assigned to “the ocean is composed  
1389 of water?” [...] To this, it seems to me, the correct answer is that  
1390 the question involves a misuse, or at best a wildly Pickwickian  
1391 use, of “composed of.” (Stebbing 1937, 87–88)

1392 Her intelligibility constraints appear to rule out the “classical mereological  
1393 relation” (Wilson 2014, 539; Berker 2018, 763) discussed in the modern ground-  
1394 ing debate, which allows for statements such as “the ocean is composed of  
1395 water.”

1396 Along similar lines, Stebbing argued that the metaphysical use of the vo-  
1397 cabulary of “priority,” “determination,” “ultimacy,” “appearance,” and the like  
1398 goes beyond our ordinary-language use of cognate terms and strays into the  
1399 realm of misuse. We have seen that she was willing to admit logical necessity,  
1400 though not specifically metaphysical necessity. Stebbing was careful to ward  
1401 off the intrusion of metaphysics into her logic. Concerning the proposal that  
1402 axioms may be defined in terms of logical priority, she objected, “But logical  
1403 priority is not absolute. The notion of logical priority is obscure. Its discussion  
1404 has been encumbered with difficult and dubious metaphysical assumptions”  
1405 (Stebbing 1930a, 175). She went on to argue that priority could perhaps be  
1406 defined in terms of simplicity, but that as “simplicity is also a relative notion”  
1407 (Stebbing 1930a, 175), not an absolute one, the problem is not thereby solved.

1408 Stebbing was happy with the use of the word “determination” in its mental  
1409 or epistemological sense, as, for example, in “the determination by experiment  
1410 of those properties of phenomena that vary quantitatively” (Stebbing 1930a,  
1411 313). But she warned that in slipping into using “determines” in a metaphys-  
1412 ical sense, we may unwittingly slide into running those two senses together:  
1413 “The question of one-one [causal] determination belongs to the retrospective  
1414 attitude; it concerns knowledge, not action. [...] The statement of a causal  
1415 uniformity is a generalization; consequently, it involves abstraction” (Stebbing  
1416 1930a, 264).

1417 Stebbing’s arguments here found an echo in Carnap, who, one year later,  
1418 noted that “prior,” etymologically speaking, means “before.” In its metaphys-  
1419 ical use, by contrast, “it is not supposed to mean the temporally prior any  
1420 more, but the prior in some other, specifically metaphysical, respect” (Carnap

1421 1931, 225). Carnap, of course, drew much stronger, globally anti-metaphysical  
 1422 conclusions from this lack of intelligibility.<sup>7</sup> Soon afterwards, Stebbing wrote,

1423 The Logical Positivists, including Wittgenstein, agree in rejecting  
 1424 certain traditional, and still not uncommon views, concerning  
 1425 the nature of philosophy. [...] With this rejection I also agree. The  
 1426 views rejected are those which hold that philosophy is concerned  
 1427 with the “ultimate nature of reality.” But in this phrase “ultimate”  
 1428 stands for nothing. (Stebbing 1933a, 5)

1429 Stebbing, of course, did not derive an anti-metaphysical conclusion from her  
 1430 rejection of such traditional metaphysics. We have seen that she believed in a  
 1431 specifically metaphysical method and affirmed ontological commitments to  
 1432 particulars, universals, facts, and physical objects. Yet Stebbing’s reservations  
 1433 about the vocabulary of “priority,” “determination,” “ultimacy,” and “essence”  
 1434 were not of the nature of a merely sceptical challenge, holding out for this  
 1435 vocabulary to prove its usefulness, as modern critics of grounding often do  
 1436 (Wilson 2014; Koslicki 2020), nor even the stronger kind of scepticism that  
 1437 largely questions the intelligibility of “grounding” and its associated vocabu-  
 1438 lary (Daly 2012). She disavowed necessity, essence, and classical mereology.  
 1439 She took her arguments to license a fully-fledged “rejection” of metaphysical  
 1440 systems, which assumed that such vocabulary referred to bespoke metaphys-  
 1441 ical relations. Her anti-grounding conclusions were stronger than those of  
 1442 Wilson and Koslicki, who admit determination relations but no overarching  
 1443 grounding relation, or even Daly, who proposes that grounding claims might  
 1444 be “cases of restricted necessities” (Daly 2012, 98).<sup>8</sup>

1445 Stebbing would also have opposed monism, both substance monism and  
 1446 priority monism, as a solution to the problem of well-foundedness. Substance  
 1447 monists maintain that there is (“ultimately”) only one thing. But in Stebbing’s  
 1448 view, “‘ultimate’ stands for nothing” (Stebbing 1933a, 5) in its metaphysical  
 1449 use, and the assumption that there is only one thing runs afoul of the method  
 1450 of perceptual science. To construct a physical theory requires a plurality of  
 1451 observers and theorists, and the same is true of philosophy (Stebbing 1929, 147;  
 1452 1937, 108–109). Theorising is impossible without the assumption that multiple  
 1453 perceiving minds can perceive the same, mind-external objects. Pluralism is, of

7 For a Carnapian case against grounding, see MacBride and Janssen-Lauret (forthcoming).

8 Daly tells me (personal communication) that he now considers that wording slightly misleading; he meant that grounding talk can be dispensed with and replaced with claims of restricted necessity. He considers his own position to be close to Stebbing’s “rejectionism” about grounding.



1454 course, not a logical truth. We can, without contradiction, say that there is only  
1455 one thing. But, Stebbing would have said, I cannot intelligibly maintain that  
1456 there is only one thing when I do physics or philosophy of physics. I cannot  
1457 do philosophy and coherently maintain that there is only one thing if I adhere  
1458 to even a moderate philosophical naturalism. As she objected to Wittgenstein  
1459 and the early Carnap, *we* (multiple persons) know that the assumption that  
1460 there is only one thing is false. It is falsified when I draw upon physical  
1461 knowledge or when I interact with other people. “Theoretical physics has  
1462 developed by the continual modification of common-sense views through a  
1463 stage of what might be called perceptual science [...] unless perceptual science  
1464 is true theoretical physics cannot be true” (Stebbing 1929, 148). Perceptual  
1465 science includes the assumption of multiple minds.

1466 Monism failed, as far as Stebbing was concerned, both because of monists’  
1467 denial of the naturalistically necessary assumption of the ultimate existence  
1468 of multiple perceiving minds and because of their persistent reliance on  
1469 “Aristotle’s notion of *priority in nature*” (Schaffer 2018, his italics) to argue  
1470 that the whole is metaphysically prior to, or more ultimate than, the parts.  
1471 Stebbing maintained that Aristotelian metaphysics of this sort was of dubious  
1472 intelligibility and had, in any case, been obviated by modern science (Stebbing  
1473 1930a, 433).

1474 Last, I will extract from Stebbing’s text a response she could, and likely  
1475 would, have made against the charge that analysis is merely linguistic and  
1476 therefore inferior to grounding. Fine, for example, writes that when we analyse  
1477 “the couple Jack and Jill is married” as “Jill is married to Jack,” it is “the point  
1478 of the reduction to show that couples are a ‘logical fiction’ and hence not really  
1479 existent,” but objects that such “reduction is a *semantical matter*” (Fine 2001,  
1480 9, his italics). And Berker objects that in metaphysical disputes, proponents  
1481 of a certain view “disagree with their opponents—and with each other—over  
1482 *substantive matters, not over linguistic or conceptual matters*” (Berker 2018,  
1483 739, his italics).

1484 Stebbing would have considered the Fine-Berker objection to analysis to  
1485 rest on a clear mistake, the mistake of conflating same-level analysis with  
1486 metaphysical analysis. Same-level analysis is linguistic or conceptual, explicating  
1487 language in terms of more language. When we engage in metaphysical  
1488 analysis, by contrast, we “determine the elements and the mode of combi-  
1489 nation of those elements to which reference is made when any given true  
1490 assertion is made” (Stebbing 1932a, 79)—where “determine,” as usual with

1491 Stebbing, is used in the epistemic rather than the metaphysical sense of the  
1492 word.

1493 Stebbing's metaphysical analysis is neither linguistic nor conceptual. It  
1494 gives a full account of the basic facts, the constituents of the world, and their  
1495 arrangement, which are there if the sentence is true. Stebbing, like Fine,  
1496 disapproved of the implications of calling logical constructions "fictions"  
1497 (Stebbing 1933b, 502) because couples, for example, are not fictitious. But,  
1498 unlike Fine, Stebbing held that the actions and properties of couples can  
1499 always be satisfactorily explained in terms that mention only the individual  
1500 members of the couple. So it is appropriate, by her lights, to regard a couple  
1501 as a construct. We do for couples as we do for councils:

1502 We may say that a College, or the Council of a College, or a Com-  
1503 mittee, or a Nation, have acted in a certain way. Thus, for example,  
1504 we may say, "The Council have elected A as chairman." This state-  
1505 ment says something about each member of the Council, but it  
1506 does not say of each member that he elected A. But a set of state-  
1507 ments could be found, jointly equivalent to the original statement,  
1508 which would be each a statement about one individual mem-  
1509 ber. The action of the Council is a logical construction. (Stebbing  
1510 1930a, 504)

1511 Stebbing went further and argued that metaphysical analysis is, in fact, the  
1512 only way to step outside a cycle of same-level definitions, a merely postula-  
1513 tional system, and formulate metaphysical hypotheses about what demands  
1514 our claims really make on reality. To start with a specification of a consti-  
1515 tutive essence, a question of the form "What is it to be a so-and-so?" she  
1516 argued, would be useless because it traps us in a postulational cycle. Meta-  
1517 physicians who attempt to begin with the specification of constitutive natures  
1518 have thereby gained no knowledge of whether anything exists that really  
1519 has that nature. While they intended to investigate reality, in practice they  
1520 remain stuck engaging in same-level analysis instead of getting down to the  
1521 proper business of metaphysics, metaphysical analysis. Without metaphysical  
1522 analysis, they have no way to get at reality.

1523 The point I wish to emphasize is that it is a grave defect in meta-  
1524 physical method to begin the investigation of problems by asking:  
1525 What is it to be a so-and-so? For example: What is it to be a ma-  
1526 terial thing? What is it to be a cause? The only possible form of

1527 answer to such a question is a definition, which leads us nowhere.  
1528 We must begin with commonsense facts, such as *I see this candle*,  
1529 or *This blow on his head killed this man*, or *Her remarks made him*  
1530 *angry*. It is useless first to define “material thing” or “cause” and  
1531 then to ask whether the terms so defined are exemplified in the  
1532 world. (Stebbing 1932a, 74)

1533 In summary, Stebbing’s trenchant objections to many of the pivotal arguments  
1534 and machinery of grounding mean that a grounding interpretation of Stebbing  
1535 cannot be upheld. How, then, are we to account for Stebbing’s passages quoted  
1536 above stating that “the analysandum may be regarded as a fact” (Stebbing  
1537 1932a, 77), that “we must admit that there are non-basic facts [...] non-basic  
1538 facts are facts of a different kind from basic facts” (Stebbing 1932a, 81), and  
1539 that “the relation of *being on a lower level than* is clearly asymmetrical and  
1540 transitive” (Stebbing 1932b, 311, n.4)? These seem to present metaphysical  
1541 analysis as a chain-relation that links a fact to another fact or facts, linked  
1542 to another fact or facts, and so forth. I suggest that there are two possible  
1543 readings that make sense of the Stebbing passages that I quoted at the end of  
1544 section 4.

1545 According to the first possible reading, Stebbing meant that there really are  
1546 non-basic facts, involving properties and relations distinct from those involved  
1547 in basic facts, but the properties and relations in question are physical (or  
1548 biological, or mental), not metaphysical. In Stebbing’s claim that “a fact *F* is  
1549 based upon a fact *F'* when *F* cannot be unless *F'* is” (Stebbing 1932a, 80), the  
1550 “cannot” must be read as expressing not metaphysical necessity but either  
1551 logical necessity or a restricted physical necessity. Textual evidence clearly  
1552 revealed that Stebbing did not believe in higher-level facts formed from special  
1553 metaphysical relations like necessitation, constitution, or classical mereology.  
1554 Yet this does not exclude the possibility of some higher levels of facts consisting  
1555 of lower-level ones standing in physical relations, known to us as the result  
1556 of empirical discovery. Two up-quarks and a down-quark combine into a  
1557 proton, which is orbited by an electron to form a hydrogen atom; the hydrogen  
1558 atom’s electron combines with another atom’s electron into a cloud to create  
1559 a chemical bond that holds together a molecule; macromolecules combine  
1560 into DNA strands, *et cetera*, all composing physical or biological facts.

1561 On this reading, it is unproblematically and literally true both that there  
1562 are certain non-basic facts and that there are no distinctively metaphysical  
1563 relations or distinctively metaphysical facts. Macro-facts are formed out of

1564 basic facts plus physical properties and relations, and perhaps specifically  
 1565 chemical, biological, physiological, or psychological properties and relations.  
 1566 While this interpretation makes ready sense of much of Stebbing's text, it is  
 1567 not obvious that it fully accounts for the chain-like structure that Stebbing  
 1568 attributes to "being on a lower level."

1569 According to the second possible reading, all of the levels except that of  
 1570 basic facts are strictly speaking levels of logical construction, and some of  
 1571 Stebbing's discourse about non-basic facts must be read as a mere façon de  
 1572 parler, a dispensable shorthand to be explicated in terms of incomplete symbol  
 1573 theory. On this interpretation, Stebbing's claim that "we must admit that there  
 1574 are non-basic facts. But non-basic facts are facts of a different kind from basic  
 1575 facts" (Stebbing 1932a, 81) constitutes an oblique way of expressing that we  
 1576 must admit the "non-basic-fact" manner of speaking, even though reality  
 1577 only contains basic facts. As Stebbing put the point elsewhere, "To say that  
 1578 the table is a logical fiction (or construction) is not to say that the table is a  
 1579 fictitious, or an imaginary, object; it is rather to deny that, in any ordinary  
 1580 sense, it is an object at all" (Stebbing 1930a, 502). When Stebbing wrote, "The  
 1581 relation of *being on a lower level than* is clearly asymmetrical and transitive.  
 1582 To say that *a* is on a lower level than *F* is to say that *a* is in some sense *simpler*  
 1583 *than F*" (Stebbing 1932b, 311, n.4), she meant that the relational predicate  
 1584 "being on a lower level than" does not really stand for a relation because it is  
 1585 always flanked on at least one side by an incomplete symbol, which disappears  
 1586 upon analysis.

1587 There is some textual evidence in favour of this second reading of Stebbing.  
 1588 She wrote, for example,

1589 We may perhaps say that "S" in a given usage is an incomplete  
 1590 symbol when "S" occurs in an expression expressing a proposition  
 1591 and "S" is neither a name nor a descriptive phrase referring to a  
 1592 particular which is a constituent of the proposition through some  
 1593 property belonging to a particular. (Stebbing 1930a, 156)

1594 Stebbing made explicit that, concerning discourse about linguistic types,  
 1595 propositions, sets or classes, numbers, and mathematical points and lines, she  
 1596 took the line that these are logical constructs that disappear upon analysis. At  
 1597 times, she also suggested taking this line concerning macro-physical objects:

1598 It does not make sense to say that a logical construction can be  
 1599 substituted for a persistent substantival object, although it is sense

1600 to say that a table is not a persistent substantial object, and that  
1601 every statement about this table can be finally translated into a set  
1602 of sentences in which the word “table” does not occur. (Stebbing  
1603 1933d, 23)

1604 Another advantage of the latter interpretation is that Stebbing’s theory, on  
1605 this interpretation, bridges the gap between truth-making, which relates a  
1606 sentence to a fact, and the kind of metaphysical explanation that relates facts  
1607 to a further fact or facts and forms a chain-like structure. The contemporary  
1608 debate assumes that truth-making cannot form chains because sentences or  
1609 propositions, on the one hand, and facts, on the other, are not sufficiently alike  
1610 in kind. But if the chain-like structure is a feature specifically of the relation  
1611 of “being on a higher level of logical construction,” then since sentences  
1612 (or propositions) and non-basic facts are both logical constructs, they are  
1613 sufficiently alike to feature in the same role in the chain-like structure.

## 1614 6 Conclusion

1615 Stebbing’s positive proposal concerning the question of well-foundedness  
1616 is one that combines her own, *sui generis* kind of metaphysical analysis of  
1617 perceptual and other ordinary facts with a certain kind of naturalism accord-  
1618 ing to which questions about the structure of reality need to be approached  
1619 by a divide-and-conquer method assigning different sub-questions to differ-  
1620 ent branches of science and philosophy (Stebbing 1943). Analytic or a priori  
1621 methods will not settle the question whether reality is well-founded. Modern  
1622 physics proves incompatible, in different ways, with the atomisms of Russell,  
1623 of Moore, and of Wittgenstein and leaves room for a non-wellfounded reality.  
1624 The new physics requires us to believe in a plurality of objects and to accept  
1625 analyses that appear very unintuitive; these analyses are metaphysical, at  
1626 least in that they make demands concerning the size and arrangement of the  
1627 components of reality. Stebbing’s naturalism is thus interestingly different  
1628 from Quinean or Carnapian naturalism, being more metaphysical. Her system  
1629 brings with it a robust metaphysical apparatus. Though one devoid of neces-  
1630 sity, fundamentality, and determination, it includes facts, particulars, and  
1631 universals (including relations). Stebbing’s system and metaphysical views

1632 remain defensible in the twenty-first century and deserve to be better known  
 1633 to us now.\*

1634 Frederique Janssen-Lauret  
 1635  0000-0003-0862-7556  
 1636 University of Manchester  
 1637 frederique.janssen-lauret@manchester.ac.uk

## 1638 References

- 1639 ANSCOMBE, Gertrude Elizabeth Margaret. 1959. *An Introduction to Wittgenstein's*  
 1640 *Tractatus*. London: Hutchinson & Co.
- 1641 ARMSTRONG, David M. 1989. *Universals: An Opinionated Introduction*. Boulder, Col-  
 1642 orado: Westview Press.
- 1643 —. 2004. *Truth and Truthmakers*. Cambridge Studies in Philosophy. Cambridge: Cam-  
 1644 bridge University Press, doi:10.1017/cbo9780511487552.
- 1645 AYER, Alfred Jules, ed. 1959. *Logical Positivism*. Glencoe, Illinois: Free Press.
- 1646 BEANEY, Michael. 2016. "Susan Stebbing and the Early Reception of Logical Empiri-  
 1647 cism in Britain." in, pp. 233–256, doi:10.1007/978-3-319-21876-2\_12.
- 1648 BERKER, Selim. 2018. "The Unity of Grounding." *Mind* 127(507): 729–777, doi:10.109  
 1649 3/mind/fzw069.
- 1650 CARNAP, Rudolf. 1931. "Überwindung der Metaphysik durch logische Analyse der  
 1651 Sprache." *Erkenntnis* 2: 219–241. Reprinted and translated in Ayer (1959, 60–81),  
 1652 doi:10.1007/bf02028153.
- 1653 CHAPMAN, Siobhan. 2013. *Susan Stebbing and the Language of Common Sense*. History  
 1654 of Analytic Philosophy. Basingstoke, Hampshire: Palgrave Macmillan, doi:10.105  
 1655 7/9781137313102.
- 1656 COLIVA, Annalisa. 2021. "Stebbing, Moore (and Wittgenstein) on Common Sense and  
 1657 Metaphysical Analysis." *British Journal for the History of Philosophy* 29(5): 914–934,  
 1658 doi:10.1080/09608788.2021.1936447.
- 1659 DALY, Christopher John. 2012. "Skepticism about Grounding." in *Metaphysical Ground-*  
 1660 *ing: Understanding the Structure of Reality*, edited by Fabrice CORREIA and Ben-  
 1661 jamin Sebastian SCHNIEDER, pp. 81–100. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press,  
 1662 doi:10.1017/cbo9781139149136.003.
- 1663 DIXON, Scott. 2016. "What is the Well-Foundedness of Grounding?" *Mind* 125(498):  
 1664 439–468, doi:10.1093/mind/fzv112.

---

\* I am grateful to Chris Daly, Stephan Leuenberger, Fraser MacBride, and two anonymous referees for their comments on my paper, to Stephanie Rennick for her editorial work on this special issue, and to the audience of the workshop "Varieties of Nonwellfoundedness" for their questions and suggestions.

- 1665 EDDINGTON, Arthur Stanley. 1928. *The Nature of the Physical World*. Newcastle upon  
1666 Tye: Cambridge Scholars Publishing.
- 1667 EGERTON, Karl. 2021. "Susan Stebbing and the Truthmaker Approach to Metaphysics."  
1668 *Logique et Analyse* 256: 403–423, doi:10.2143/LEA.256.0.3290351.
- 1669 FINE, Kit. 2001. "The Question of Realism." *Philosophers' Imprint* 1(2), <http://hdl.handle.net/2027/spo.3521354.0001.002>.
- 1670
- 1671 —. 2012. "Guide to Ground." in *Metaphysical Grounding: Understanding the Structure of*  
1672 *Reality*, edited by Fabrice CORREIA and Benjamin Sebastian SCHNIEDER, pp. 37–80.  
1673 Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, doi:10.1017/cbo9781139149136.002.
- 1674 JANSSEN-LAURET, Frederique. 2017. "Susan Stebbing, Incomplete Symbols, and  
1675 Founderentist Meta-Ontology." *Journal for the History of Analytical Philosophy*  
1676 5(2): 6–17, doi:10.15173/jhap.v5i2.2928.
- 1677 —. 2022a. *Susan Stebbing*. Elements on Women in the History of Philosophy. Cam-  
1678 bridge: Cambridge University Press, doi:10.1017/9781009026925.
- 1679 —. 2022b. "Susan Stebbing's Metaphysics and the Status of Common-Sense Truths."  
1680 in *Women in the History of Analytic Philosophy. Selected Papers of the Tilburg-*  
1681 *Groningen Conference 2019*, edited by Jeanne PEIJNENBURG and Sander VER-  
1682 HAEGH, pp. 167–194. *Women in the History of Philosophy and Sciences* n. 15.  
1683 Cham: Springer, doi:10.1007/978-3-031-08593-2\_8.
- 1684 —. 2024. "Grandmothers and Founding Mothers of Analytic Philosophy: Constance  
1685 Jones, Bertrand Russell, and Susan Stebbing on Complete and Incomplete Sym-  
1686 bols." in *Bertrand Russell, Feminism, and Women Philosophers in his Circle*, edited  
1687 by Landon D. C. ELKIND and Alexander Mugar KLEIN, pp. 207–239. London:  
1688 Palgrave Macmillan, doi:10.1007/978-3-031-33026-1\_8.
- 1689 —. forthcoming. "Susan Stebbing's Anti-Idealist Philosophy of Physics: Her Rebuttal  
1690 of Eddington's Argument from Intrinsic Nature." in *Susan Stebbing: Analysis,*  
1691 *Common Sense, and Public Philosophy*, edited by Annalisa COLIVA and Louis  
1692 DOULAS. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- 1693 KOSLICKI, Kathrin. 2020. "Skeptical Doubts." in *The Routledge Handbook of Metaphys-*  
1694 *ical Grounding*, edited by Michael J. RAVEN, pp. 164–179. Routledge Handbooks  
1695 in Philosophy. London: Routledge, doi:10.4324/9781351258845-16.
- 1696 LOWE, Edward Jonathan. 2006. *The Four-Category Ontology: A Metaphysical Founda-*  
1697 *tion for Natural Science*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, doi:10.1093/0199254397  
1698 .001.0001.
- 1699 MACBRIDE, Fraser. 2013. "Truthmakers." in *The Stanford Encyclopedia of Philosophy*.  
1700 Stanford, California: The Metaphysics Research Lab, Center for the Study of Lan-  
1701 guage and Information, [https://plato.stanford.edu/archives/spr2013/entries/trut](https://plato.stanford.edu/archives/spr2013/entries/truthmakers/)  
1702 [hmakers/](https://plato.stanford.edu/archives/spr2013/entries/truthmakers/).
- 1703 —. 2018. *On the Genealogy of Universals: The Metaphysical Origins of Analytic Philoso-*  
1704 *phy*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, doi:10.1093/oso/9780198811251.001.0001.

- 1705 MACBRIDE, Fraser and JANSSEN-LAURET, Frederique. 2022. "Why Lewis Would Have  
1706 Rejected Grounding." in *Perspectives on the Philosophy of David K. Lewis*, edited  
1707 by Helen BEEBEE and Anthony Robert James FISHER, pp. 66–91. Oxford: Oxford  
1708 University Press, doi:10.1093/oso/9780192845443.003.0005.
- 1709 —. forthcoming. "Metaphysical Determination, Analysis and Systematicity." in *Systematic Metaphysics: Historical and Contemporary Perspectives*, edited by Aaron  
1710 SEGAL and Nicholas F. STANG. New York: Oxford University Press.
- 1712 MILKOV, Nikolay. 2003. *A Hundred Years of English Philosophy*. Philosophical Studies  
1713 Series n. 94. Dordrecht: Kluwer Academic Publishers, doi:10.1007/978-94-017-  
1714 0177-8.
- 1715 MOORE, George Edward. 1899. "The Nature of Judgment." *Mind* 8(30): 176–193.  
1716 Reprinted in Moore (1993, 1–19), doi:10.1093/mind/viii.2.176.
- 1717 —. 1925. "A Defence of Common Sense." in *Contemporary British Philosophy, 2nd*  
1718 *series*, edited by J. H. MUIRHEAD, pp. 191–224. London: George Allen & Unwin.  
1719 Reprinted in Moore (1959, 32–59) and in Moore (1993, 106–133).
- 1720 —. 1959. *Philosophical Papers*. London: George Allen & Unwin.
- 1721 —. 1966. *Lectures on Philosophy*. London: George Allen & Unwin. Edited by Casimir  
1722 Lewy.
- 1723 —. 1993. *Selected Writings*. London: Routledge. Edited by Thomas Baldwin, doi:10.432  
1724 4/9780203769812.
- 1725 RUSSELL, Bertrand Arthur William. 1903. *The Principles of Mathematics*. London:  
1726 Taylor & Francis. Second edition: Russell (1937), third edition: Russell (2020).
- 1727 —. 1911. "Knowledge by Acquaintance and Knowledge by Description." *Proceedings*  
1728 *of the Aristotelian Society* 11: 108–128. Reprinted in Russell (1917, 209–232) and  
1729 Russell (1992, 147–161), doi:10.1093/aristotelian/11.1.108.
- 1730 —. 1917. *Mysticism and Logic*. London: George Allen & Unwin.
- 1731 —. 1937. *The Principles of Mathematics*. 2nd ed. London: George Allen & Unwin.  
1732 Second edition of Russell (1903), with a new introduction; third edition: Russell  
1733 (2020).
- 1734 —. 1992. *Logical and Philosophical Papers, 1909–1913*. The Collected Papers of Bertrand  
1735 Russell, The McMaster University Edition n. 6. London: Routledge. Edited by John  
1736 G. Slater, with the assistance of Bernd Frohmann.
- 1737 —. 2020. *The Principles of Mathematics*. 3rd ed. London: Routledge. Third edition of  
1738 Russell (1903), doi:10.4324/9780203822586.
- 1739 SCHAFFER, Jonathan. 2018. "Monism." in *The Stanford Encyclopedia of Philosophy*.  
1740 Stanford, California: The Metaphysics Research Lab, Center for the Study of Lan-  
1741 guage and Information, <https://plato.stanford.edu/archives/win2018/entries/monism/>.
- 1742
- 1743 STEBBING, L. Susan. 1925. "Universals and Professor Whitehead's Theory of Objects."  
1744 *Proceedings of the Aristotelian Society* 25: 305–330, doi:10.1093/aristotelian/25.1.  
1745 305.



- 1746 —. 1929. “Realism and Modern Physics.” *Proceedings of the Aristotelian Society, Sup-*  
 1747 *plementary Volume* 9: 146–161, doi:[10.1093/aristoteliansupp/9.1.112](https://doi.org/10.1093/aristoteliansupp/9.1.112).
- 1748 —. 1930a. *A Modern Introduction to Logic*. London: Methuen & Co.
- 1749 —. 1930b. “Concerning Substance.” *Proceedings of the Aristotelian Society* 30: 285–308,  
 1750 doi:[10.1093/aristotelian/30.1.285](https://doi.org/10.1093/aristotelian/30.1.285).
- 1751 —. 1932a. “The Method of Analysis in Metaphysics.” *Proceedings of the Aristotelian*  
 1752 *Society* 33: 65–94, doi:[10.1093/aristotelian/33.1.65](https://doi.org/10.1093/aristotelian/33.1.65).
- 1753 —. 1932b. “Substances, Events, and Facts.” *The Journal of Philosophy* 29(12): 309–322,  
 1754 doi:[10.2307/2015342](https://doi.org/10.2307/2015342).
- 1755 —. 1933a. *Logical Positivism and Analysis*. London: H. Milford.
- 1756 —. 1933b. *A Modern Introduction to Logic*. 2nd ed. London: Methuen & Co. First  
 1757 edition: Stebbing (1930a).
- 1758 —. 1933c. “The ‘A Priori.’” *Proceedings of the Aristotelian Society, Supplementary Volume*  
 1759 *12*: 178–197, doi:[10.1093/aristoteliansupp/12.1.150](https://doi.org/10.1093/aristoteliansupp/12.1.150).
- 1760 —. 1933d. “Constructions.” *Proceedings of the Aristotelian Society* 34: 1–30, doi:[10.1093](https://doi.org/10.1093/aristotelian/34.1.1)  
 1761 [/aristotelian/34.1.1](https://doi.org/10.1093/aristotelian/34.1.1).
- 1762 —. 1935. “Sounds, Shapes and Words.” *Proceedings of the Aristotelian Society, Supple-*  
 1763 *mentary Volume* 14: 1–21, doi:[10.1093/aristoteliansupp/14.1.1](https://doi.org/10.1093/aristoteliansupp/14.1.1).
- 1764 —. 1937. *Philosophy and the Physicists*. London: Methuen & Co.
- 1765 —. 1939. “Some Puzzles about Analysis.” *Proceedings of the Aristotelian Society* 39:  
 1766 69–84, doi:[10.1093/aristotelian/39.1.69](https://doi.org/10.1093/aristotelian/39.1.69).
- 1767 —. 1942. “Moore’s Influence.” in *The Philosophy of G.E. Moore*, edited by Paul Arthur  
 1768 SCHILPP, pp. 515–532. The Library of Living Philosophers n. 4. LaSalle, Illinois:  
 1769 Open Court Publishing Co.
- 1770 —. 1943. “The New Physics and Metaphysical Materialism.” *Proceedings of the Aris-*  
 1771 *totelian Society* 43: 167–184, doi:[10.1093/aristotelian/43.1.167](https://doi.org/10.1093/aristotelian/43.1.167).
- 1772 WEST, Peter. 2022. “The Philosopher versus the Physicist: Susan Stebbing on Edding-
- 1773 ton and the Passage of Time.” *British Journal for the History of Philosophy* 30(1):  
 1774 130–151, doi:[10.1080/09608788.2021.1985962](https://doi.org/10.1080/09608788.2021.1985962).
- 1775 WILSON, Jessica M. 2014. “No Work for a Theory of Grounding.” *Inquiry* 57(5/6):  
 1776 535–579, doi:[10.1080/0020174x.2014.907542](https://doi.org/10.1080/0020174x.2014.907542).
- 1777 WITTGENSTEIN, Ludwig. 1922. *Tractatus logico-philosophicus*. International Library  
 1778 of Psychology, Philosophy and Scientific Method. London: Kegan Paul, Trench,  
 1779 Trübner & Co.

PROOF

1780 Infinite Regresses, Ground Conditions  
1781 & Metaphysical Satisfaction

DONNCHADH O'CONNAILL & OLLEY PEARSON

1782 In this paper we clarify a regress argument for metaphysical foundation-  
1783 alism, distinguishing strong and modest versions of this argument. We  
1784 suggest that while the strong version is open to objection, the modest  
1785 version is much more plausible and it supports a methodological stance:  
1786 one ought to refrain from assuming that anti-foundationalism is meta-  
1787 physically possible. This modest stance follows from our argument that  
1788 currently we lack reasons to believe anti-foundationalism is possible.  
1789 This stance opens a new topic in the debate between foundationalism  
1790 and anti-foundationalism, placing a burden on the anti-foundationalist  
1791 to provide reasons to think that anti-foundationalism is possible.

1792 A well-known version of metaphysical foundationalism holds that the uni-  
1793 verse must have a fundamental level, a collection of entities on which all  
1794 other entities depend and none of which is itself dependent upon anything  
1795 else for its existence. To deny this, it has been argued, is to set up a vicious  
1796 regress of dependent entities (e.g., [Leibniz 1989, 149–150, 217–218](#); [Fine 1995,](#)  
1797 [286](#); [Schaffer 2010, 37](#)). However, this vicious regress argument has come  
1798 under increasing criticism. Whether or not the argument succeeds depends  
1799 on whether or not the regress in question is vicious, and, notoriously, propo-  
1800 nents of vicious regress arguments often simply assert this to be the case (for  
1801 discussion see [Maurin 2007](#); [Bliss 2013](#)).

1802 In this paper, we shall consider one kind of regress. While we do not  
1803 think it establishes foundationalism, we shall argue that it shows that anti-  
1804 foundationalism fails a plausible principle of metaphysics, the Principle of  
1805 Satisfaction: a fact which cannot obtain unless its ground conditions are satis-  
1806 fied should not be assumed to be possible unless there is reason to believe that  
1807 those conditions can be satisfied.<sup>1</sup> Those who find such a principle plausible

---

1 The notion of ground conditions shall be defined in the next section.

1808 should be moved by the regress argument to what we term *modest founda-*  
 1809 *tionalism*: one ought to refrain from assuming that anti-foundationalism is  
 1810 metaphysically possible. (To be more precise, we shall largely discuss scenar-

1811 ios, each of which contains only a single maximal<sup>2</sup> grounding chain. Therefore,  
 1812 in what follows, by modest foundationalism and anti-foundationalism, we  
 1813 specifically mean modest foundationalism and anti-foundationalism with  
 1814 regard to scenarios of this form, unless otherwise specified.)  
 1815 In section 1, we introduce the debate and some terminology. In section 2, we  
 1816 present a version of the regress argument that relies on a strong generalising  
 1817 claim from each member of the regress to all of the members of the regress.  
 1818 In section 3, we present a more modest version of this generalising claim and  
 1819 use it to develop a modest version of the argument, supporting an epistemic  
 1820 claim. This epistemic claim in turn supports the methodological claims that  
 1821 anti-foundationalism fails the Principle of Satisfaction and so modest founda-

## 1824 **1 Definitions**

1825 The dispute between foundationalists and anti-foundationalists has been  
 1826 discussed in terms of a number of different relations (see Tahko 2023). We  
 1827 shall consider this dispute in terms of grounding, following much of the  
 1828 recent literature (e.g., Schaffer 2010; Bliss 2013; Morganti 2014; Dixon 2016;  
 1829 Rabin and Rabern 2016; Trogdon 2018). We shall adopt an orthodox view on  
 1830 which grounding is an irreflexive, asymmetrical, and transitive relation that  
 1831 holds between facts: for the fact that  $f$  to be grounded by the fact that  $g$  is for  
 1832  $f$  to obtain in virtue of the obtaining of  $g$  (hereafter  $g < f$ ).<sup>3</sup> We shall work  
 1833 with a notion of grounding as *partial*, in the sense that it can include both  
 1834 full grounding and merely partial grounding. A full ground for  $f$  is by itself  
 1835 sufficient for  $f$  to be grounded (Fine 2012, 3); a merely partial ground for  $f$  is  
 1836 not.

1837 We understand foundationalism as follows:

---

2 This will be defined in the following section.

3 Each of these formal features has been questioned, e.g., in Rodriguez-Pereyra (2015); for a defence, see Raven (2013). We shall formulate grounding claims using relational predicates, e.g.,  $f$  is grounded by  $g$ ; for discussion of predicational and operational formulations of grounding claims, see Correia and Schnieder (2012, 10–12).

1838 FOUNDATIONALISM. Every non-fundamental fact  $f$  is fully  
 1839 grounded by some fundamental fact  $g$  or facts,  $G_s$  (Dixon 2016, 446;  
 1840 see also Rabin and Rabern 2016, 366).

1841  $f$  is *fundamental*  $=_{df}$  there are no  $G_s$  such that  $f$  is partially  
 1842 grounded by any  $G$  (Dixon 2016, 442).

1843 We shall also use the notions of grounding chains and maximal grounding  
 1844 chains, which we define as follows:

1845 A *grounding chain*  $=_{df}$  a group of facts, each member of which  
 1846 either grounds or is grounded by each of the other members.

1847 A *maximal grounding chain*  $=_{df}$  a grounding chain such that it is  
 1848 not the case that there is a fact that grounds each member of the  
 1849 chain.<sup>4</sup>

1850 It is common to think that some entities are subject to necessary conditions.  
 1851 For instance, plausibly non-empty sets exist only if their members exist; an  
 1852 entity is red only if it is coloured; and an entity is a cube only if it has six sides.  
 1853 In some such cases, the condition is *satisfied* (for instance, each red postbox  
 1854 is coloured); in others, the condition might not be satisfied (for instance, the  
 1855 non-empty set of unicorns does not exist). We believe that all grounded facts  
 1856 are subject to a specific kind of necessary condition concerning their grounds:  
 1857 a grounded fact can obtain only if there obtains some fact or facts that ground  
 1858 it.<sup>5</sup> To capture this idea, we shall now introduce two concepts that will be  
 1859 crucial to our argument in this paper:

1860  $C$  is a *ground condition for*  $f$   $=_{df}$   $C$  is a necessary condition for the  
 1861 obtaining of  $f$ , which can only be satisfied by the obtaining of facts  
 1862 that ground  $f$ .<sup>6</sup>

4 This definition follows Dixon (2016, 453), and Rabin and Rabern (2016, 364).

5 We think that this is a plausible assumption (though in contrast with Wildman 2018). If this assumption turns out not to be true of all grounded facts, our argument can be read as applying to just those grounded facts for which it is true. This highlights a hitherto undiscussed potential anti-foundationalist response to the regress argument, namely, to try to argue that, although the facts involved in the regress are each grounded, some of them do not require grounds in order to obtain.

6  $f$  may have necessary conditions other than its ground conditions. In what follows, we set these other necessary conditions aside. We use the term ‘fact’ non-factively. Thus, we characterize

1863 D is a *total ground condition* for  $f =_{df}$  (a) D is a ground condition  
 1864 for the obtaining of  $f$ , and (b) there is no condition E that is neither  
 1865 identical to nor a proper part of D and which is a ground condition  
 1866 for  $f$ .

1867 We shall not provide a metaphysics of necessary conditions or, hence, of  
 1868 the part-of relation between such conditions. However, instances of these  
 1869 relations holding between grounding conditions can be identified via the  
 1870 satisfiers of those conditions, namely, the grounds of certain facts.<sup>7</sup> A ground  
 1871 condition for the obtaining of  $f$ ,  $C^*$ , is a proper part of a ground condition for  
 1872 the obtaining of  $f$ ,  $C$ , iff all the grounds of  $f$  that satisfy  $C^*$  are among the  
 1873 grounds of  $f$  that satisfy  $C$ , and not vice versa. (The ground condition for the  
 1874 obtaining of  $f$ ,  $C$ , is identical with a ground condition for the obtaining of  $f$ ,  
 1875  $C^*$ , if and only if the grounds of  $f$  that satisfy  $C$  are all and only the grounds  
 1876 of  $f$  that satisfy  $C^*$ .)

1877 To illustrate these definitions, consider first  $h$ , the fact that A and B exist.  $h$   
 1878 is grounded by  $g$ , the fact that A exists, and  $h$  cannot obtain unless  $g$  obtains.  
 1879 We can describe this case by saying that the obtaining of  $g$  is a necessary  
 1880 condition, or more specifically, a *ground condition*,  $C$ , for the obtaining of  $h$ ,  
 1881 and conversely, that the obtaining of  $g$  *satisfies* the ground condition  $C$ . Now  
 1882 consider  $i$ , the fact that A or B exists.  $i$  cannot obtain unless either  $g$ , the fact  
 1883 that A exists, obtains and grounds  $i$ , or  $j$ , the fact that B exists, obtains and  
 1884 grounds  $i$ . We can capture this by saying that  $i$  has a ground condition  $C^{**}$   
 1885 that can be satisfied by either the obtaining of  $g$  or of  $j$ . Note that unlike  $C^*$ ,  
 1886 the satisfaction of  $C^{**}$  does not require the obtaining of any specific fact; it  
 1887 just requires the obtaining of either  $g$  or  $j$ . Another difference between these  
 1888 two examples is that  $C^{**}$  could be a total ground condition for  $i$ , but  $C^*$  could  
 1889 not be a total ground condition for  $h$ , as  $h$  also requires the obtaining of  $j$ , the  
 1890 fact that B exists.

1891 A fact that does not have a ground condition does not stand in need of  
 1892 being grounded; it can obtain without there being any facts that ground it. We  
 1893 assume that all such facts are fundamental facts.

---

ground conditions as concerning *the obtaining of* facts (though for ease of presentation, we will occasionally drop this phrase and speak simply of *conditions for facts* and of *facts satisfying* those conditions).

7 The obtaining of  $g$  or the  $G$ s satisfies the ground condition,  $C$ , for the obtaining of  $f$ , if  $C$  is the condition that necessarily  $f$  can obtain only if  $g$  or the  $G$ s obtain and  $g$  or the  $G$ s ground  $f$ , and if  $g$  or the  $G$ s do obtain and do ground  $f$ .

1894 If D is  $f$ 's total ground condition, then  $f$  stands in need of ground (since  
1895 it has ground conditions), and if D is satisfied, then  $f$ 's need for ground is  
1896 completely met;  $f$  can obtain without any further grounds of it obtaining.

1897 To further clarify the notion of a total ground condition, it is useful to  
1898 contrast it with a more familiar notion that we have already mentioned, that  
1899 of a full ground. To draw this contrast, suppose  $f$  is the fact 'Some human  
1900 exists'. We assume that  $f$  is fully grounded in each of its instances.  $f$  thus has  
1901 multiple full grounds, but it has only a single total ground condition. It might  
1902 be thought that  $f$ 's total ground condition could be satisfied by any one of  $f$ 's  
1903 full grounds, but whether or not this is so depends on further considerations.  
1904 Consider fact  $g$ , the fact that Greta Thunberg exists, and suppose that  $g$  is not  
1905 itself grounded. In that case,  $f$  would be fully grounded in  $g$ , and  $g$  would  
1906 satisfy  $f$ 's total ground condition. But now suppose that  $g$  is itself grounded,  
1907 e.g., in certain biological facts. In that case,  $g$  could not by itself satisfy  $f$ 's  
1908 total ground condition. This suggests a second contrast between a full ground  
1909 and a total ground condition. While a full ground for a fact  $f$  is sufficient for  $f$   
1910 to be grounded, that full ground might itself be unable to obtain unless itself  
1911 grounded by further facts, in which case  $f$  itself could not obtain unless these  
1912 further grounds obtain.<sup>8</sup> In contrast, if  $f$ 's total ground condition is satisfied,  
1913 no other facts need obtain in order for  $f$  to obtain.

1914 The reason for introducing the notions of ground conditions and total  
1915 ground conditions is that they allow us to focus on what is really at stake in  
1916 the regress argument—not which grounds a certain fact is posited as having,  
1917 but which grounds a fact needs in order to obtain. Consider the following toy  
1918 example:  $h < g < f$ . In this example,  $f$  is posited as having grounds, and these  
1919 grounds ( $g$  and  $h$ ) together satisfy a ground condition for  $f$ , which we can  
1920 term  $C^*$ . The question is whether any other facts are needed in order for  $f$  to  
1921 obtain—or, put another way, whether or not  $C^*$  is a *total* ground condition for  
1922  $f$ . Whether it is will depend on further information about this example. For  
1923 instance, assume that  $h$  itself has a ground condition. If this ground condition  
1924 was not satisfied, then  $h$  would fail to obtain, in which case  $C^*$  would not be  
1925 satisfied and  $f$  could not obtain. Therefore, the ground condition for  $h$  is also

---

8 Note also that if a scenario is stipulated as containing a full ground for  $f$ , it does not follow that this scenario is possible, since it does not follow that  $f$ 's total ground condition is satisfied in this scenario.

1926 a ground condition for  $f$ , and  $C^*$  could not be a total ground condition for  $f$   
 1927 since  $f$  has a ground condition in addition to  $C^*$ .<sup>9</sup>

## 1922 **The Strong Argument**

1929 In this section, we shall describe a vicious regress argument against anti-  
 1930 foundationalism, which we shall term the *strong argument*. More specifically,  
 1931 it is an argument against anti-foundationalism regarding any scenario in  
 1932 which each fact belongs to just one maximal grounding chain. Having out-  
 1933 lined the strong argument, we shall state why we do not accept it, and in the  
 1934 following section, we shall put forward a different, more modest argument.

1935 Both the strong argument and the more modest argument make use of  
 1936 a certain procedure, which we introduce as follows: Consider a scenario in  
 1937 which a fact,  $f$ , obtains. If  $f$  has a ground condition, then, in order for  $f$  to  
 1938 obtain, some other fact or facts must obtain and ground it. Suppose that  $f$  is  
 1939 grounded in  $g$ , a fundamental fact, and in no other fact.  $g$  satisfies  $f$ 's total  
 1940 ground condition; therefore, no other facts need obtain in order to ground  $f$ .  
 1941 Now suppose  $f$  is grounded in a non-fundamental fact,  $g_1$ .  $f$ 's total ground  
 1942 condition is not satisfied by  $g_1$ , since  $g_1$  itself stands in need of ground. If  $g_1$   
 1943 is grounded in a fundamental fact,  $g_2$ , then  $g_2$  can satisfy  $g_1$ 's total ground  
 1944 condition, and  $g_1$  and  $g_2$  can together satisfy  $f$ 's total ground condition.

1945 In what follows, we shall speak of a fact's total ground condition being  
 1946 satisfied *at a point on a chain*, where to say that  $f$ 's total ground condition is  
 1947 satisfied at a point on a chain,  $g_n$ , is to say that  $f$  stands in a grounding chain  
 1948 with  $g_n$  such that  $g_n$  and the facts in the chain which it grounds and which  
 1949 ground  $f$  together satisfy  $f$ 's total ground condition. In the above scenario  
 1950 with  $f$ ,  $g_1$ , and  $g_2$ ,  $f$ 's total ground condition is satisfied at  $g_2$ .

1951 What we have said so far suggests a procedure that can be applied to any fact  
 1952  $f$  that stands in need of ground and belongs to a single maximal grounding  
 1953 chain: we can go down the chain looking for a point at which  $f$ 's total ground  
 1954 condition is satisfied. If the chain contains a fundamental fact,  $g_n$ , then  $f$ 's  
 1955 total ground condition will be satisfied at that point on the chain. However,  
 1956 if none of the facts that ground  $f$  is a fundamental fact, then  $f$ 's ground

---

9 If we further assume that  $g$  and  $h$  are each full grounds of  $f$ , this example makes clear how a single full ground of  $f$  may not be itself sufficient to satisfy  $f$ 's total ground condition. For instance,  $g$  would be sufficient to ground  $f$  insofar as, if  $g$  obtains, nothing else is needed to ground  $f$ . But in the scenario just described,  $g$  cannot by itself satisfy  $f$ 's total ground condition because  $g$ , and hence  $f$ , can only obtain if  $h$  does.



1957 condition cannot be satisfied at any point on this chain. This is because any  
 1958 point on the chain will be such that the fact located at that point has ground  
 1959 conditions not satisfied at that point, and those ground conditions will also  
 1960 be ground conditions for  $f$ , which are hence also not satisfied at that point.  
 1961 Thus, in such a chain, there is no fact,  $g_n$ , such that  $g_n$  and the facts that it  
 1962 grounds can together satisfy  $f$ 's total ground condition. This point holds even  
 1963 if  $f$  stands in an infinitely descending maximal chain of grounding.

1964 The next step in the strong argument is the crucial one, and also potentially  
 1965 the most problematic. This is a *generalising claim*, from the preceding claim  
 1966 about each of the facts that ground  $f$  to a general claim about them all together.  
 1967 The strong argument makes use of the following:

1968 THE STRONG GENERALISING CLAIM (STRONG CLAIM). For any  
 1969 grounding chain, if a fact's total ground condition cannot be satisfied  
 1970 at any point in that chain, then it cannot be satisfied by the facts in  
 1971 that chain at all.

1972 Given the STRONG CLAIM, it is not possible for  $f$ 's total ground condition to be  
 1973 satisfied by the facts in an infinitely descending grounding chain. The same is  
 1974 true for any member of such a grounding chain: there is nothing unique about  
 1975  $f$  in this example. It follows that no such chain is possible. Therefore, any  
 1976 scenario in which each fact is a member of just a single maximal grounding  
 1977 chain must be such that each maximal chain contains a fundamental fact that  
 1978 grounds each member of the chain.

1979 Something like the STRONG CLAIM is found in other vicious regress argu-  
 1980 ments for foundationalism. For instance, Anna-Sofia Maurin argues that a  
 1981 regress is vicious if the direction of the regress follows what she terms the  
 1982 direction of dependence:

1983 The regress is vicious because the trigger, to exist (or, the triggering  
 1984 statement, to be true) requires, first, that step one exists (or, is  
 1985 true), which, in turn requires that step two exists (or, is true), etc.  
 1986 *ad infinitum*. The existence of the trigger will therefore depend  
 1987 on the existence of some "final" step of the regress—a step that  
 1988 will never exist given that the regress is infinite. (Maurin 2007,  
 1989 21)<sup>10</sup>

---

10 The trigger is whatever starts the regress, e.g., the obtaining of  $f$  in the procedure outlined earlier in this section.

1990 In our terms, we can reconstruct Maurin's argument as follows: If a certain  
 1991 fact (the trigger) has a ground condition, it can only obtain if its immediate  
 1992 ground obtains; its immediate ground can only obtain if *its* immediate ground  
 1993 obtains; and so on. And (this is the **STRONG CLAIM**) the trigger can only obtain  
 1994 if there is a final step in the regress, a fact that has no ground condition. Both  
 1995 the strong argument and Maurin's argument seem to involve a conditional  
 1996 assumption of the following form: if a certain condition cannot be satisfied at  
 1997 any point in the chain, it cannot be satisfied by the facts in the chain at all.

1998 We shall not rely on the **STRONG CLAIM** in what follows. In effect, it  
 1999 amounts to the following: the facts that together satisfy *f*'s total ground con-  
 2000 dition must be located at some point in the chain. That is, if the chain of  
 2001 facts is possible, then at some point in the chain there should be a fact,  $g_\gamma$ ,  
 2002 which is such that  $g_\gamma$  and the other members of the chain between it and *f*  
 2003 together satisfy *f*'s total ground condition. But to assume this is to beg the  
 2004 question against the anti-foundationalist. This is because the kind of chain the  
 2005 anti-foundationalist describes—a grounding chain containing an unbounded  
 2006 infinity of members—is structured in such a way that no member of it could  
 2007 possibly satisfy the description of  $g_\gamma$  we have just given.<sup>11</sup> It may be, of course,  
 2008 that the **STRONG CLAIM** turns out to be correct. But dialectically, it carries  
 2009 little force against the anti-foundationalist. For the strong argument to work,  
 2010 the **STRONG CLAIM** must be supported by an independent argument.<sup>12</sup>

### 2013 **3 The Modest Claim and the Principle of Satisfaction**

2012 In this section, we turn to a different version of the regress argument, which  
 2013 we term the *modest argument*. It utilises the following claim:

---

11 A similar point is made in Bliss (2013, 407–408).

12 It is important to note that the demand for the satisfaction of a total ground condition is not a demand that a chain has a fact like  $g_\gamma$  or a termination point. A termination point is a member of the chain that grounds all other members of the chain and that is itself ungrounded, i.e., a fundamental fact. It is clear that a chain containing a termination point can satisfy a fact's total ground condition. But the definition of a total ground condition leaves open the possibility that such a condition could be satisfied by an unbounded infinite chain of grounds: in that scenario, each member of the chain after a given fact, *f*, would satisfy a ground condition of *f*, and *f* would have no other ground condition that needed to be satisfied. (It may turn out to be the case that a chain cannot contain a total ground condition unless it terminates—but this is a substantial further claim, one that, in effect, the strong argument is an attempt to justify. We do not assume that the facts in a chain cannot satisfy a fact's total ground condition unless the chain terminates, and we contend that the strong argument does not succeed in establishing such a claim.)

2014 THE MODEST GENERALISING CLAIM (MODEST CLAIM). For any  
2015 grounding chain, if a fact's total ground condition cannot be satisfied  
2016 at any point in that chain, then we lack reason to believe that it can  
2017 be satisfied by the facts in that chain at all.

2018 The **MODEST CLAIM** is very plausible. As we argued in section 2, in a chain  
2019 with no fundamental fact,  $f$ 's total ground condition cannot be satisfied at any  
2020 point in the chain. We accepted at the end of the previous section that it does  
2021 not straightforwardly follow from this that  $f$ 's total ground condition cannot  
2022 be satisfied in this scenario. But we have no reason to believe that it *can* be  
2023 satisfied, because it is not clear what else there is in this scenario to which the  
2024 anti-foundationalist can appeal in order to satisfy  $f$ 's total ground condition.<sup>13</sup>  
2025 (Note, our claim is not that it is impossible to provide such reasons, but that  
2026 after a careful consideration of a putative anti-foundationalist ontology, as  
2027 yet none are forthcoming.)

2028 We anticipate two responses to the **MODEST CLAIM**. The first is that it  
2029 overlooks the possibility of appealing, not to *any* specific point on the chain,  
2030 but to *all* of the facts in the chain together (or more specifically, to all of the  
2031 facts in the chain, each of which grounds  $f$ ). In other words, the suggestion is,  
2032 the **MODEST CLAIM** commits something like a fallacy of composition: moving  
2033 from a true claim about each member of the chain to a false claim about all  
2034 members of the chain.

2035 This response would work against the **STRONG CLAIM** (indeed, it is very  
2036 similar to the criticism of the **STRONG CLAIM** we offered at the end of the  
2037 previous section). But it is not convincing as a response to the **MODEST CLAIM**,  
2038 precisely because the latter is a weaker claim. The **MODEST CLAIM**, to repeat,  
2039 is that we lack reason to think that the facts in the chain can together satisfy  
2040  $f$ 's total grounding condition. In other words, to affirm the **MODEST CLAIM** is  
2041 not to rule out that all of the facts in the chain are together able to satisfy  $f$ 's  
2042 total grounding condition; it is to claim that we have no reason to think that all  
2043 of the facts in the chain are capable of doing so. It is true that claims about all  
2044 of the facts in the chain are logically distinct from claims about any of the facts  
2045 in the chain, but this truth does not by itself provide reason to think that all  
2046 of the facts in the chain can together satisfy  $f$ 's total grounding condition. To  
2047 undermine the **MODEST CLAIM**, the anti-foundationalist requires something  
2048 more than this logical difference; she owes us a reason to think that there

---

13 The same will be true of any member of such a chain, as there is nothing unique about  $f$  here.

2049 is an *ontological* difference, i.e., that all the facts in the chain together can  
 2050 satisfy *f*'s total ground condition. (More precisely, she owes us an argument  
 2051 that this is possible as opposed to simply stipulating that it is, since such a  
 2052 stipulation would beg the question in favour of anti-foundationalism.)

2053 A second response to the **MODEST CLAIM** might appeal to the point that  
 2054 every fact in an infinitely descending chain has a full ground; in such a chain,  
 2055 every fact needing a ground has one, so all total ground conditions must be  
 2056 satisfied. But this response is inadequate. As was mentioned in footnotes 8 and  
 2057 9, that a postulated scenario contains a full ground for a fact *f* does not entail  
 2058 that it contains facts adequate to satisfy *f*'s total ground condition. Therefore,  
 2059 one cannot directly argue from the claim that every fact in a maximal chain  
 2060 has a full ground to the conclusion that every fact in this chain has its total  
 2061 ground condition satisfied. For it to be clear that a scenario is one in which  
 2062 the total ground condition for *f* was satisfied, it would have to be clear that in  
 2063 this scenario none of *f*'s ground conditions was not satisfied. But this does  
 2064 not follow from the fact that in the scenario some of *f*'s ground conditions  
 2065 are satisfied (which is all that straightforwardly follows from each fact having  
 2066 a full ground).

2067 The *modest argument*, as we shall refer to it, combines the **MODEST CLAIM**  
 2068 with the claim defended in the previous section that *f*'s total ground condition  
 2069 cannot be satisfied at any point in the chain. Together, these claims support  
 2070 an epistemological conclusion: we lack reason to believe that *f*'s total ground  
 2071 condition can be satisfied by the facts in the chain. As noted above, it would  
 2072 be a mistake to infer from this that anti-foundationalism is false. But one can  
 2073 infer a more modest methodological conclusion:

2074 **MODEST FOUNDATIONALISM.** One ought to refrain from assuming  
 2075 that anti-foundationalism is metaphysically possible.<sup>14</sup>

2076 **MODEST FOUNDATIONALISM** follows from the modest argument via the  
 2077 following methodological principle:

2078 **THE PRINCIPLE OF SATISFACTION (PS).** A fact that cannot obtain  
 2079 unless its grounding conditions are satisfied should not be assumed

---

14 Again, we are limiting ourselves for the time being to scenarios with only a single maximal grounding chain. We discuss scenarios containing multiple maximal chains in section 4.

2080 to be possible unless there is reason to believe that those conditions  
2081 can be satisfied.<sup>15</sup>

2082 We shall not be able to provide a thorough defence of PS, but we shall  
2083 outline a general motivation for accepting it. Whilst it can be appropriate  
2084 to assume that certain facts are possible, the obtaining of a grounded fact is  
2085 conditional on certain necessary conditions, specifically its ground conditions,  
2086 being satisfied. PS spells out an approach that one ought to take towards the  
2087 possibility of such facts in light of their having ground conditions.

2088 To see how this works, consider an example that does not obviously involve  
2089 issues to do with non-well-foundedness: the possibility that the singleton set  
2090 {Pegasus} exists.<sup>16</sup> Call the fact that {Pegasus} exists *f*.<sup>17</sup> It seems plausible  
2091 that if *f* would obtain, it would be grounded in the fact that Pegasus exists,  
2092 and furthermore, unless Pegasus existed, *f*'s total grounding condition could  
2093 not be satisfied. Applying PS, we suggest that one should not accept that *f* is  
2094 possible unless one has reason to believe that it is possible that Pegasus exists.  
2095 This seems like a perfectly reasonable approach to take. Conversely, it seems  
2096 unreasonable to accept that *f* is possible if one has no reason to believe that  
2097 it is possible that Pegasus exists.

2098 Consider another example: the possibility that some humans are immortal.  
2099 Call the fact that some humans are immortal *g*. One might think that if *g*  
2100 obtains, it would be grounded by one or more of its instances, i.e., by the  
2101 fact that a specific human, Nigel, is immortal (call this fact *h*). But in order  
2102 for this to provide a reason to think that *g* is possible, we surely need some  
2103 reason to think that *h* is possible. If we have no such reason, then it is surely  
2104 unreasonable to justify the thought that *g* is possible by postulating *g*'s being  
2105 grounded in *h*. Alternatively, one might think that if *g* obtains, it would be  
2106 grounded in, e.g., certain biological facts; but again, without any reason to  
2107 think that these biological facts are themselves possible, it seems unreasonable

- 
- 15 As Bliss (2013, 415) notes, it might be possible to motivate a regress argument against anti-foundationalism using a PRINCIPLE OF SUFFICIENT REASON (PSR). It is worth noting that PS is much more modest than a PSR. Whilst a PSR demands that everything in a scenario requires an explanation, PS only says that, regarding entities that we have reason to believe are impossible unless certain conditions are met, we ought not to postulate these entities in a scenario unless we have reason to believe that those conditions can be met in that scenario.
- 16 Thanks to two referees for suggesting this example and, more generally, for suggesting that we need to spend more time motivating PS.
- 17 Recall that we are using a non-factive conception of facts, so we are not committing ourselves to *f*'s actually obtaining or even to its being metaphysically possible.

2108 to think that *g* is possible. **PS** is in effect a generalisation of these specific  
 2109 claims: if you think that a fact has grounding conditions, and if you lack  
 2110 reason to think that any of the facts that would ground it are possible, then  
 2111 you should refrain from accepting that this fact is possible.<sup>18</sup>

2112 **PS** is a claim concerning modal epistemology, specifically regarding whether  
 2113 or not we should accept that certain scenarios are metaphysically possible.  
 2114 A thorough analysis of **PS** would require discussing how it relates to various  
 2115 existing approaches in modal epistemology.<sup>19</sup> We shall not be able to address  
 2116 this topic in the detail it deserves, but we shall consider how **PS** relates to one  
 2117 well-known approach: appeals to conceivability. Again, it will help to start  
 2118 with a toy example that does not involve non-well-foundedness: whether or  
 2119 not it is possible for pigs to fly. One way to address this is to ask whether or  
 2120 not this scenario is conceivable, and a simple claim is that if it is conceivable  
 2121 (or conceivable in a certain way), then we have reason to think that it is  
 2122 metaphysically possible.<sup>20</sup> On the face of it, this approach does not require  
 2123 applying **PS** and indeed even seems to rule it out (whether a grounded fact, *f*,  
 2124 is possible would simply be settled by whether we could conceive *f* itself).

2125 However, even if it is true that **PS** does not align straightforwardly with  
 2126 the conceivability approach, it is not necessarily at odds with it. To make this  
 2127 clear, assume that the fact that there is a flying pig (call this fact *f*) has a  
 2128 ground condition (if it does not, then **PS** would not apply to it). Given this,  
 2129 for the scenario conceived of to be metaphysically possible, it must contain  
 2130 facts that ground *f* and that together satisfy *f*'s total ground condition (this is  
 2131 something that even the conceivability theorist should be willing to accept).

2132 **PS** entails that we should not regard this scenario as possible unless we  
 2133 have some reason to believe that it contains facts that satisfy *f*'s total ground  
 2134 condition. Whether or not this restriction is compatible with the conceivability  
 2135 approach will depend on how demanding a notion of conceiving is appealed to.  
 2136 Suppose that conceiving of a scenario only justifies one in thinking that it

---

18 Note that **PS** leaves open what can count as a reason to accept that a fact's grounding conditions can be satisfied. This is not a problem. **PS** is not intended to be a method for discovering which scenarios are (or are not) metaphysically possible. Rather, it is intended as a constraint to be applied to claims that certain scenarios are possible. As a comparison, consider appeals to testimony. As a general rule, one should not accept testimony as a reason to believe *p* unless the testimony is from a reliable witness. This seems to us to be a perfectly good epistemic rule, but it leaves open exactly what standards must be met in order for someone to be a reliable witness.

19 Thanks again to two referees for suggesting that we engage with this literature.

20 There are a number of different ways of conceiving a scenario (Chalmers 2002). In what follows, the differences between them will, for the most part, not be relevant.

2137 is possible if one conceives of it in exhaustive detail. PS is perfectly compatible  
2138 with this kind of appeal to conceivability: a clear conception of how the facts  
2139 in a scenario satisfy  $f$ 's total ground condition would qualify as a reason to  
2140 think those facts can satisfy its total ground condition. Suppose, on the other  
2141 hand, that conceiving a scenario is supposed to justify one in thinking it is  
2142 possible, even if one's conception omits or glosses over many important details  
2143 of the scenario. This kind of appeal to conceivability may not be compatible  
2144 with PS. However, we suggest there is an independent reason to be sceptical  
2145 of this kind of appeal to conceivability. One well-known advocate of such  
2146 scepticism is Peter van Inwagen, who notes that "to assert the possibility of  $p$   
2147 is to commit oneself to the possibility of a whole, coherent reality of which the  
2148 truth of  $p$  is an integral part" and suggests that conceivability theorists often  
2149 do not examine the details of such proposed realities (1998, 78). It has also  
2150 been argued that conceivability is not a reliable guide to possibility insofar as  
2151 it involves simply stipulating certain features of the conceived scenario (e.g.,  
2152 Kung 2010; Berto and Schoonen 2018). While we shall not defend these more  
2153 sceptical approaches to conceivability in any detail, they illustrate that there  
2154 is existing work on modal epistemology that is at least compatible with PS.<sup>21</sup>

2155 An anti-foundationalist may respond that all the modest argument shows,  
2156 even in conjunction with PS, is that if one is going to assume that a possi-  
2157 ble world contains a grounded fact, one must also assume that it contains  
2158 everything necessary to satisfy that fact's total ground condition. To this end,  
2159 she might add an assumption to her position: a maximal grounding chain  
2160 contains all of the facts needed to satisfy  $f$ 's total ground condition.

2161 However, this response is inadequate. What is precisely at issue is whether  
2162 or not the total ground condition for a fact is satisfied by the facts in a specific  
2163 kind of chain, e.g., an infinitely descending maximal grounding chain. We  
2164 submit that the anti-foundationalist is not entitled to assume that they are  
2165 without further argument. We have already provided reasons to think that  $f$ 's  
2166 total ground condition cannot be satisfied at any point in an infinite grounding  
2167 chain, and as argued above, it is not clear what else in the chain could satisfy  
2168  $f$ 's total ground condition. Therefore, the anti-foundationalist needs to provide  
2169 some reason to think that the facts in such a chain would contain facts capable

---

21 We accept that not everyone will be satisfied with our discussion of how PS relates to existing work in modal epistemology; in particular, someone who thinks there are independent reasons to accept appeals to conceivability may be tempted to reject PS on this basis. Our defence of PS can therefore be understood as conditional: one should accept PS unless one already has reason to accept an approach in modal epistemology that undermines it.

2170 of satisfying *f*'s total ground condition. Until such further reason is provided,  
 2171 we ought to refrain from assuming that *f*'s total ground condition would be  
 2172 satisfied by any or all facts in such a chain. And this leads immediately to  
 2173 refraining from assuming that such a chain is possible.

2174 Combining **PS** with the modest argument leads us to **MODEST FOUN-**  
 2175 **DATIONALISM**. **MODEST FOUNDATIONALISM** does not entail the falsity of  
 2176 anti-foundationalism. Rather, it is a methodological stance towards anti-  
 2177 foundationalism; one should not assume that anti-foundationalism is either  
 2178 actually or possibly true. This stance is open to revision, but the burden lies  
 2179 with the anti-foundationalist to provide some positive reason to think that  
 2180 what she is describing is metaphysically possible (we have argued that cur-  
 2181 rently we are lacking any such reason).<sup>22</sup>

#### 2182 4 Other Grounding Structures

2183 The argument we have given so far establishes **MODEST FOUNDATIONALISM**  
 2184 for scenarios in which each fact belongs to a single maximal grounding chain.  
 2185 We believe that essentially the same argument can be given for scenarios  
 2186 where facts belong to multiple maximal grounding chains. We do not have  
 2187 adequate space here to make this more general argument, but in this section,  
 2188 we will say something to indicate what form it would take.

2189 The argument we have given for facts belonging to single maximal chains  
 2190 works by establishing that at no point in such a chain will we locate grounds  
 2191 adequate to satisfy a fact's total ground condition: call this claim **SINGLE**.  
 2192 The argument then moves from **SINGLE** via the **MODEST GENERALISING**  
 2193 **CLAIM** and **PS**. To make the more general argument, we need an analogue of  
 2194 **SINGLE** for complex structures where facts belong to more than one maximal  
 2195 grounding chain. We propose the following: at no level in such a structure will  
 2196 we locate grounds adequate to satisfy a fact's total ground condition (where  
 2197 a level simply consists of one point on each of the maximal chains to which  
 2198 the fact belongs).<sup>23</sup> We will refer to this claim as **COMPLEX**. We would also

22 Cameron (2008, 12–13) also argues for a position more modest than foundationalism as usually understood, and he also utilises a methodological principle; but his position and the principle he uses each differ from ours. Cameron's argument is essentially that we ought to take the actual world to be foundationalist because it permits unified explanations. Our argument is that we ought not to assume that any possible world is anti-foundationalist, because we lack reason to believe that anti-foundationalism can satisfy any fact's total ground condition.

23 The notion of a level allows for the concern that we might need to consider points on more than one maximal chain to locate facts adequate to satisfy a fact's total ground condition. Our talk of a



2199 need an analogue of the **MODEST CLAIM**, and we propose the following: for  
 2200 any grounding structure, if a fact's total ground condition cannot be satisfied  
 2201 at any level in that structure, then we lack reason to believe that it can be  
 2202 satisfied by the facts in that structure at all. We will refer to this as the **SECOND**  
 2203 **MODEST CLAIM**.

2204 In order to establish **MODEST FOUNDATIONALISM** for complex structures,  
 2205 we would try to establish **COMPLEX** and move from it via the **SECOND MODEST**  
 2206 **CLAIM** and **PS**. We would hope to justify the **SECOND MODEST CLAIM** much  
 2207 as we have justified the **MODEST CLAIM**: it is not clear what else could satisfy  
 2208 the total ground condition of a fact in such a structure other than the levels  
 2209 in the structure.

2210 Whilst we can't argue for **COMPLEX** here, we believe that it is actually a  
 2211 claim that many anti-foundationalists would be willing to accept. This is  
 2212 because it seems the most apt anti-foundationalist scenarios would include  
 2213 continuous grounding series, and such continuous series are specifically ones  
 2214 where we do not locate total ground conditions at any level.

2215 Before closing this section, we will briefly consider three complex grounding  
 2216 structures in order to show how our arguments apply to them. We do not  
 2217 intend this to establish the general argument but to indicate how it can handle  
 2218 specific kinds of complex grounding structure.

2219 In the first scenario,  $f$  is fully grounded in a fundamental fact,  $g$ .  $f$  is also  
 2220 fully grounded in  $h_1$ , which is fully grounded in  $g$  and also fully grounded in  
 2221  $h_2$ .  $h_2$  is fully grounded in  $g$  and also in  $h_3$ , etc. That is, the  $H$ s form an infinite  
 2222 descending chain of grounding such that each of the  $H$ s,  $h_\delta$ , is itself fully  
 2223 grounded in  $g$  as well as in the subsequent  $H$ ,  $h_{\delta+1}$ . The facts in this scenario  
 2224 together form a *fully pedestalled chain* (Dixon 2016, 447–448).<sup>24</sup> This kind of  
 2225 grounding structure should be acceptable to a foundationalist because each  
 2226 non-fundamental fact in it is fully grounded in a fundamental fact,  $g$ .

2227 The generalised argument concerning complex structures that we outlined  
 2228 above accommodates this scenario. Starting with  $f$ , our argument requires  
 2229 that we must be able to locate a fact or facts adequate to satisfy its total  
 2230 ground condition at some level in the structure. We can easily do this. In  
 2231 particular,  $g$  can satisfy  $f$ 's total ground condition. To see this, we can note

---

level should not be taken to imply that facts adequate to satisfy a fact's total ground condition must be satisfied by some point on *each* maximal chain.

24 All of the facts in this scenario belong to a single maximal chain. However,  $f$  also lies on multiple maximal chains in the structure (e.g.,  $g < f$ ,  $g < h_1 < f$ , etc.), so it counts as complex and relevantly different to the scenarios discussed previously.

2232 that  $g$  is sufficient for  $f$  to be grounded and  $g$  does not itself have any ground  
 2233 conditions, so the ground condition for  $f$  that is satisfied by  $g$  is a total ground  
 2234 condition for  $f$ .<sup>25</sup> Therefore, any level in the structure that includes  $g$  will be a  
 2235 level at which we can locate facts adequate to satisfy  $f$ 's total ground condition.  
 2236 Furthermore, the same holds for each of the other non-fundamental facts in  
 2237 the scenario, i.e., each of the  $H$ s. For example,  $g$  can satisfy  $h_1$ 's total ground  
 2238 condition in a way analogous to that in which it satisfies  $f$ 's. Thus, **COMPLEX**  
 2239 does not arise in this scenario, and so our argument does not stand against  
 2240 it.<sup>26</sup>

2241 In the second scenario,  $f$  is the fact that A exists or B exists.  $f$  belongs to  
 2242 two maximal grounding chains. The first is  $g < f$ , where  $g$  is the fact that A  
 2243 exists. The second is  $\dots < i_3 < i_2 < i_1 < f$ , where  $i_1$  is the fact that B exists,  
 2244  $i_2$  is a fact that fully grounds  $i_1$ ,  $i_3$  fully grounds  $i_2$ , etc.  $g$  is fundamental and  
 2245 stands in no grounding relation with any of the  $i$ s.

2246 Focusing on  $f$ , our generalised argument requires that we must be able to  
 2247 locate facts adequate to satisfy its total ground condition at some level in the  
 2248 structure. And it would seem that we can do this. As above, it seems  $g$  can  
 2249 satisfy  $f$ 's total ground condition.

2250 However, while we can locate grounds adequate to satisfy  $f$ 's total ground  
 2251 condition, this is not true of any of the other non-fundamental facts in the  
 2252 structure. For example,  $i_1$  lies on a single maximal chain of grounding, which  
 2253 contains no fundamental fact. Thus, a variant of **COMPLEX** arises in this  
 2254 second scenario, and our argument applies against it, as the foundationalist  
 2255 would want.

2256 In the third scenario,  $f$  is merely partially grounded in a fundamental fact,  
 2257  $g$ .  $f$  is also merely partially grounded in  $h_1$ , and together  $g$  and  $h_1$  fully ground  
 2258  $f$ .  $h_1$  is merely partially grounded in  $g$  and merely partially grounded in  $h_2$ ,  
 2259 and together  $g$  and  $h_2$  fully ground  $h_1$ .  $h_2$  is in turn merely partially grounded

---

25 We do not intend our comments in the sentence to generalise; that is, we are not implying that in any scenario whatsoever, any fact that is fundamental and a full ground of  $f$  will satisfy  $f$ 's total ground condition. For example, consider an adjusted first scenario, which is as the first scenario except  $g$  is fully grounded in  $g_1$ , which is fundamental. In the adjusted first scenario,  $g_1$  would not satisfy  $f$ 's total ground condition. However,  $g_1$  would satisfy  $g$ 's total ground condition, and hence  $g_1$  and  $g$  together would satisfy  $f$ 's total ground condition. Likewise for any variation of this scenario in which  $f$  stands in a maximal chain of full grounding, which includes a fundamental fact.

26 The first scenario illustrates the claim made in footnote 12 above that the demand that each non-fundamental fact has its total ground condition satisfied is distinct from the demand that all chains of grounding must terminate.

2260 in  $g$  and merely partially grounded in  $h_3$ , and together  $g$  and  $h_3$  fully ground  
 2261  $h_2$ . And so on, so the  $H$ s form an infinite descending chain of grounding such  
 2262 that each of the  $H$ s,  $h_\delta$ , is itself merely partially grounded in  $g$  as well as in  
 2263 the subsequent  $H$ ,  $h_{\delta+1}$ , such that  $g$  and  $h_{\delta+1}$  together fully ground  $h_\delta$ .

2264 The facts in the third scenario together form a *partially pedestalled chain*  
 2265 (Dixon 2016, 454–455; see also Pearson 2023). Our arguments apply against  
 2266 this kind of grounding structure, as a foundationalist would want. Because  $g$   
 2267 is a merely partial ground of  $f$  in this structure,  $g$  cannot by itself satisfy  $f$ 's  
 2268 total ground condition. Further, each of the other facts in the structure itself  
 2269 requires grounds, and so we cannot locate facts adequate to satisfy a total  
 2270 ground condition for  $f$  at any one of these either. For example,  $h_2$  satisfies a  
 2271 ground condition for  $h_1$ , and so  $h_1$  alone cannot satisfy a total ground condition  
 2272 for  $f$ , and  $h_3$  satisfies a ground condition for  $h_2$ , so  $h_1$  and  $h_2$  together cannot  
 2273 satisfy a total ground condition for  $f$ , and so on.

2274 The points just noted also undermine our ability to locate facts adequate to  
 2275 satisfy  $f$ 's total ground condition at any level in the structure. For example, if  
 2276 we consider the level made up of  $g$  and  $h_1$ , together these are sufficient for  
 2277  $f$  to be grounded, but they cannot satisfy  $f$ 's total ground condition since  $h_1$   
 2278 itself has further ground conditions:  $h_1$  cannot obtain unless  $h_2$  does, and  
 2279 so  $f$  cannot obtain unless  $h_2$  does. And so on for the level made up of  $g$  and  
 2280  $h_2$  together, and the one made up of  $g$  and  $h_3$  together, etc. Thus, **COMPLEX**  
 2281 arises in the third scenario, and so our argument stands against it.

## 2285 5 Conclusion


2283 We have suggested that the vicious regress argument for foundationalism can  
 2284 be understood in two ways: as containing a strong or a modest claim. The  
 2285 **STRONG CLAIM** will likely be something the anti-foundationalist denies. The  
 2286 **MODEST CLAIM**, together with **PS**, supports **MODEST FOUNDATIONALISM** for  
 2287 facts lying on single maximal grounding chains. **MODEST FOUNDATIONALISM**  
 2288 can also be shown to hold for at least some complex scenarios where facts  
 2289 belong to multiple maximal grounding chains. This position opens a new  
 2290 topic in the debate between foundationalism and anti-foundationalism; it  
 2291 places a burden on the anti-foundationalist to provide reasons to think that  
 2292 anti-foundationalism is metaphysically possible.\*

---

\* We have been working on this paper, or ancestors of it, for a very long time, so we apologise in advance if we omit any names that should be included here. Thanks to Sarah Adams, Einar

2293  
2294  
2295  
2296  
2297  
2298  
2299  
2300

Donnchadh O'Conaill  
 0000-0003-2747-6693  
 Université de Fribourg  
 doconaill@yahoo.co.uk

Olley Pearson  
 0000-0001-6003-2811  
 University of Lincoln  
 opearson@lincoln.ac.uk

2301

## References

- 2302 BERTO, Francesco and SCHOONEN, Tom. 2018. "Conceivability and Possibility: Some  
 2303 Dilemmas for Humeans." *Synthese* 195(6): 2697–2715, doi:10.1007/s11229-017-  
 2304 1346-7.
- 2305 BLISS, Ricki Leigh. 2013. "Viciousness and the Structure of Reality." *Philosophical*  
 2306 *Studies* 166(2): 399–418, doi:10.1007/s11098-012-0043-0.
- 2307 CAMERON, Ross P. 2008. "Turtles all the Way Down: Regress, Priority and Fun-  
 2308 damentality." *The Philosophical Quarterly* 58(230): 1–14, doi:10.1111/j.1467-  
 2309 9213.2007.509.x.
- 2310 CHALMERS, David J., ed. 2002. *Philosophy of Mind: Classical and Contemporary Read-*  
 2311 *ings*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- 2312 CORREIA, Fabrice and SCHNIEDER, Benjamin Sebastian. 2012. "Grounding: An Opin-  
 2313 ionated Introduction." in *Metaphysical Grounding: Understanding the Structure of*  
 2314 *Reality*, edited by Fabrice CORREIA and Benjamin Sebastian SCHNIEDER, pp. 1–36.  
 2315 Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, doi:10.1017/cbo9781139149136.001.
- 2316 DIXON, Scott. 2016. "What is the Well-Foundedness of Grounding?" *Mind* 125(498):  
 2317 439–468, doi:10.1093/mind/fzv112.
- 2318 FINE, Kit. 1995. "Ontological Dependence." *Proceedings of the Aristotelian Society* 95:  
 2319 269–290, doi:10.1093/aristotelian/95.1.269.
- 2320 —. 2012. "The Pure Logic of Ground." *The Review of Symbolic Logic* 5(1): 1–25, doi:10  
 2321 .1017/S1755020311000086.

---

Bohn, Anjan Chakravarty, Nikk Effingham, Matteo Morganti, Ciaran O'Conaill, Tuomas Tahko, Benjamin Schneider, Ralph Weir, Nathan Wildman, two referees for this journal, and various referees for other journals who read and commented on drafts. Thanks also to audiences in Bristol, Groningen, and Ligerz for their feedback. O'Conaill's work on this article was supported by the Kulttuurin ja Yhteiskunnan Tutkimuksen Toimikunta (grant number 274715) and the Schweizerischer Nationalfonds zur Förderung der Wissenschaftlichen Forschung (grant applications 189031 and 166320). Pearson's work on this project was supported by the John Templeton Foundation (grant number 40485-SG-0659).

- 2322 VAN INWAGEN, Peter. 1998. "Modal Epistemology." *Philosophical Studies* 92(1): 67–84.  
2323 Reprinted in van Inwagen (2001, 243–258), doi:10.1023/A:1017159501073.
- 2324 —. 2001. *Ontology, Identity, and Modality: Essays in Metaphysics*. Cambridge: Cam-  
2325 bridge University Press.
- 2326 KUNG, Peter. 2010. "Imagining as a Guide to Possibility." *Philosophy and Phenomeno-  
2327 logical Research* 81(3): 620–663, doi:10.1111/j.1933-1592.2010.00377.x.
- 2328 LEIBNIZ, Gottfried Wilhelm. 1989. *Philosophical Essays*. Indianapolis, Indiana: Hackett  
2329 Publishing Co. Edited and translated by Roger Ariew and Daniel Garber.
- 2330 MAURIN, Anna-Sofia. 2007. "Infinite Regress – Virtue or Vice?" in *Hommage à  
2331 Wlodek. Philosophical Papers Dedicated to Wlodek Rabinowicz*, edited  
2332 by Toni RÖNNOW-RASMUSSEN, Björn PETERSSON, Jonas JOSEFSSON,  
2333 and Dan EGONSSON. Lund: Lunds Universitet, Filosofiska Institutionen,  
2334 <https://www.fil.lu.se/hommageawlodek/site/papper/MaurinAnnaSofia.pdf>.
- 2335 MORGANTI, Matteo. 2014. "Metaphysical Infnitism and the Regress of Being." *Metaphi-  
2336 losophy* 45(2): 232–244, doi:10.1111/meta.12080.
- 2337 PEARSON, Olley. 2023. "Grounding, Well-Foundedness, and Terminating Chains."  *2338 Philosophia* 51(3): 1539–1554, doi:10.1007/s11406-022-00593-x.
- 2339 RABIN, Gabriel Oak and RABERN, Brian. 2016. "Well Founding Grounding Grounding."  *2340 Journal of Philosophical Logic* 45(4): 349–379, doi:10.1007/s10992-015-9376-4.
- 2341 RAVEN, Michael J. 2013. "Is Ground a Strict Partial Order?" *American Philosophical  
2342 Quarterly* 50(2): 193–201.
- 2343 RODRIGUEZ-PEREYRA, Gonzalo. 2015. "Grounding is Not a Strict Order." *Journal of  
2344 the American Philosophical Association* 1(3): 517–534, doi:10.1017/apa.2014.22.
- 2345 SCHAFFER, Jonathan. 2010. "The Least Discerning and Most Promiscuous Truth-  
2346 maker." *The Philosophical Quarterly* 60(239): 307–324, doi:10.1111/j.1467-9213.2  
2347 009.612.x.
- 2348 TAHKO, Tuomas E. 2023. "Fundamentality." in *The Stanford Encyclopedia of Philoso-  
2349 phy*. Stanford, California: The Metaphysics Research Lab, Center for the Study of  
2350 Language and Information, [https://plato.stanford.edu/archives/win2023/entries/  
2351 fundamentality/](https://plato.stanford.edu/archives/win2023/entries/fundamentality/).
- 2352 TROGDON, Kelly. 2018. "Grounding-Mechanical Explanation." *Philosophical Studies*  
2353 175(6): 1289–1309, doi:10.1007/s11098-017-0911-8.
- 2354 WILDMAN, Nathan. 2018. "On Shaky Ground? Exploring the Contingent Fundamen-  
2355 tality Thesis." in *Reality and its Structure: Essays in Fundamentality*, edited by Ricki  
2356 Leigh BLISS and Graham PRIEST, pp. 275–290. Oxford: Oxford University Press,  
2357 doi:10.1093/oso/9780198755630.003.0015.

PROOF

2358 A Recipe for Non-wellfounded but  
2359 Complete Chains of Explanations  
2360 (And Other Determination Relations)

ALEXANDRE BILLON

2361 Consider a chain of explanation  $u_1, u_2, u_3, \dots$  where each item is fully  
2362 explained by its successor. Suppose that the chain is non-wellfounded in  
2363 the sense that it is either infinite or circular. Explanations here can be  
2364 either causal explanations or grounding, metaphysical explanations. It is  
2365 widely believed that such chains of explanation will always be incomplete,  
2366 i.e. leave things to be explained, and many philosophers have considered  
2367 this as a vice of non-wellfounded explanations, a vice they invoked to  
2368 rule out such explanations. In this article, I argue that in some cases non-  
2369 wellfounded are in fact complete. I also put forward both necessary and  
2370 non-trivial sufficient conditions for the completeness of non-wellfounded  
2371 explanations.

2372 Consider a series  $(u_i)_{i \in I}$ , whose items are each (fully) explained by their  
2373 immediate successor.  $I$  can be: (a) the set of the first  $n$  non-null integers  $\llbracket 1, n \rrbracket$ ,  
2374 in which case  $(u_i)_{i \in I}$  constitutes a finite, non-circular chain of explanations;  
2375 or (b) the set of non-null natural numbers  $\mathbb{N}^*$ , in which case  $(u_i)_{i \in I}$  constitutes  
2376 an *infinite chain of explanations*. (c)  $I$  can also be the ring of integers modulo  $n$ ,  
2377  $\mathbb{Z}/n\mathbb{Z}$  (you can picture this as the numbers  $1, 2, \dots, n$  sequentially distributed  
2378 on a circle, just like the numbers  $1, 2, \dots, 12$  are sequentially distributed on a  
2379 watch dial),<sup>1</sup> in which case  $(u_i)_{i \in I}$  constitutes a *circular chain of explanations*.

2380 We will say that in case (a), but not in cases (b) and (c), the chain is well-  
2381 founded. Let us say, moreover, that a chain of explanation is *complete* when it  
2382 leaves nothing to be explained (more on this below).

---

1 The ring of integers modulo  $n$  ( $\mathbb{Z}/n\mathbb{Z}$ ) is the set of the  $n$  first integers,  $1, \dots, n$  endowed with the addition and multiplication operations, and where (to put it rather roughly) it is assumed that for all  $x$ ,  $x = x + n$ .

2383 In a previous article on cosmological arguments, I have put forward a few  
 2384 examples of complete infinite and circular explanations, and I argued that  
 2385 complete, non-wellfounded explanations such as these might explain the  
 2386 present state of the world better than their well-founded theistic counterparts  
 2387 (Billon 2023). Although my aim was broader, the examples I gave there implied  
 2388 merely causal explanations. In this article, I would like to do three things:

- 2389 • Specify *some general informative conditions for complete and incomplete,*  
 2390 *non-wellfounded causal explanations* that can be used to assess candidate  
 2391 explanations and generate new examples of complete, non-wellfounded  
 2392 explanations.
- 2393 • Show that these conditions, which concern chains of causal explana-  
 2394 tions, easily *generalize to chains of metaphysical, grounding explanations*  
 2395 and even to chains involving other “determination relations,” such as  
 2396 supervenience.
- 2397 • Apply these general conditions to the recent debates against the exist-  
 2398 ence of non-wellfounded chains of grounds and show, with a couple  
 2399 of precise examples, that the latter can be complete and that just like in  
 2400 the case of causal explanations, non-wellfoundedness can, in fact, be  
 2401 an asset rather than a liability.

2402 In the first section, I present the recent debates about non-wellfounded  
 2403 chains of grounds and show more broadly why the question of complete,  
 2404 non-wellfounded chains of explanations is important. I then articulate the  
 2405 framework within which I will assess these questions about non-wellfounded  
 2406 explanations and determination relations (section 2). After that, I reconstruct  
 2407 an argument from Leibniz, which is, I believe, the most interesting argument  
 2408 against complete, non-wellfounded explanations (section 3). This argument  
 2409 rests on a clear example of a non-wellfounded, incomplete explanation. My  
 2410 answer to it rests on clear examples of complete, well-founded explanations  
 2411 (section 4). My examples involve causal (as opposed to metaphysical, ground-  
 2412 ing) explanations, but in the next sections (sections 5–6), I will put forward  
 2413 general formal conditions a non-wellfounded explanation must meet in or-  
 2414 der to be complete. These general criteria will then allow me to introduce  
 2415 examples of complete and incomplete, non-wellfounded chains of *grounds*  
 2416 (section 7). In the remainder of the article, I discuss a couple of objections.  
 2417 First, I argue that even though one might quibble about the definition of  
 2418 a *complete* explanation and argue that in the examples put forward our ex-



2419 planations still implicitly leave some things to be explained, these examples  
2420 unambiguously show that *non-wellfounded explanations can do better than*  
2421 *their well-founded counterparts* and that there might be non-wellfounded ex-  
2422 planations that leave nothing at all to be explained (section 8). I also show that  
2423 complete, non-wellfounded explanations are analogous and no less problem-  
2424 atic than well-accepted explanations, such as equilibrium explanations and  
2425 essentialist explanations (section 9). Finally, I discuss the possibility of infinite  
2426 explanations that are as simple as (or even simpler than) finite, well-founded  
2427 explanations (section 10).

## 2428 **1 Completeness and Non-wellfoundedness**

2429 We all wish we could have complete explanations of some things: explanations,  
2430 that is, leaving nothing to be explained. Such explanations are the Grail of  
2431 metaphysical inquiries (think of [Leibniz 1989](#)'s search for the radical origin of  
2432 things) but also of scientific inquiries (think of Einstein's quest for a "theory of  
2433 everything," see [Schilpp 1949, 63](#); see also [Hawking and Mlodinow 2010, 181](#)).  
2434 In their vast majority, however, researchers believe that if such explanations  
2435 exist, they must be well-founded. This is true in the case of causal explanations,  
2436 but it has recently come to the fore in the context of debates concerning  
2437 metaphysical grounding explanations.

2438 An interesting objection, or cluster of objections, against the existence or  
2439 the very possibility of non-wellfounded chains of grounds centers indeed  
2440 on the idea that they would be somehow explanatory defective because they  
2441 cannot be complete. [Fine \(2010\)](#) has, for example, claimed that in cases such  
2442 as (b) and (c),  $u_1$  would not have a completely satisfactory explanation:

2443       There is still a plausible demand on ground or explanation that  
2444       we are unable to evade. For given a truth that stands in need of  
2445       explanation, one naturally supposes that it should have a com-  
2446       pletely satisfactory explanation, one that does not involve cycles  
2447       and terminates in truths that do not stand in need of explanation.  
2448       ([Fine 2010, 105](#))

2449 Most often, this objection seems to appeal, more or less implicitly, to a version  
2450 of the principle of sufficient reason (PSR), to the effect that everything must  
2451 have a (full) explanation. Thus, [Schaffer \(2010\)](#) claims that:

2452           There must be a ground of being. If one thing exists only in virtue  
 2453           of another, then there must be something from which the reality  
 2454           of the derivative entities ultimately derives. (Schaffer 2010, 37)

2455           As I understand it, the objection is that non-wellfounded chains of grounds  
 2456           are incomplete in that they leave something to be explained, which is bad by  
 2457           the PSR.

2458           Against this explanatory deficiency objection, advocates of non-  
 2459           wellfounded grounding have argued that well-founded grounding chains  
 2460           face the very same explanatory problem: in case (a), the last item  $u_n$  of the  
 2461           series seems in need of an explanation too, and this explanation is lacking  
 2462           (Bliss 2014; Bliss and Priest 2018, 20–21). Yet this “*tu quoque*” reply might  
 2463           be disputed by philosophers who believe that some items are by their very  
 2464           nature somehow self-explanatory, or, at least, “autonomous” in the sense that  
 2465           they do not call for an explanation (see Dasgupta 2016; see also Miller 1996  
 2466           and other Theists on the existence and simplicity of God).

2467           Various philosophers have recently tried to precisely assess whether, as  
 2468           suggested by Schaffer, Fine, and others, non-wellfounded grounding chains  
 2469           need to fare worse explanatorily than well-founded ones (see the contributions  
 2470           in Bliss and Priest 2018 and the very useful introduction). Some, such as Bliss  
 2471           and Priest, seem to assume that non-wellfounded explanations will never be  
 2472           complete (Bliss 2013, 408; 2019; Priest 2014, 187; Cameron 2022, 130) but  
 2473           reject the request for a complete explanation. Others have underlined the fact  
 2474           that arguments for the incomplete character of non-wellfounded explanations  
 2475           are often unsound or simply lacking (Oberle 2023). Although they bring up  
 2476           interesting points, these discussions remain at a very abstract level and never  
 2477           rely on concrete examples of would-be complete explanations.

## 2478 **A Framework for Explanations**

2479           I will provide such concrete examples. Before that, let me make a couple of  
 2480           terminological points and set up the framework. I will talk, as I just have, as  
 2481           if grounding were metaphysical explanation. This might be disputed. Just like  
 2482           on some views, causality underlies (but differs from) natural explanations, on  
 2483           some views, grounding only underlies metaphysical explanations. Likewise, I  
 2484           will often talk as if explanation were a relation (rather than, say, a sentential  
 2485           operator). I am not particularly keen on the views mirrored by these ways of

2486 talking, but I believe that nothing substantial depends on them here, and they  
 2487 will make my arguments (and my prose) much more fluid.

2488 For simplicity, I will suppose that the relata of the explanation relation  
 2489 (and hence our “items”) are facts or sets of facts, where a fact is understood  
 2490 liberally as the referent of a true proposition. To make my prose more fluid  
 2491 and discuss some texts that seem committed to that view, I will sometimes  
 2492 speak as if the relata of explanations could be tropes or individuals. It should  
 2493 be clear, however, that by “trope/individual  $x$  explains trope/individual  $y$ ,” I  
 2494 only mean that the identity and/or existence of the former explains that of  
 2495 the latter. Except otherwise noted, by “A explains/grounds B,” I will always  
 2496 mean “A *fully* explains/grounds B.”

2497 More substantially, I will admit that basic explanations in which one item  
 2498 explains another (as opposed, e.g., to complex chains of simple explanations)  
 2499 have a triadic structure, involving:

- 2500 • a “final” item,
- 2501 • an “initial” item,
- 2502 • and a link accounting for the transition from the final item to the initial  
 2503 item, which I will consider to have the form of a law.

2504 The final item, along with the laws, explains the initial item.<sup>2</sup>

2505 By accounting for the transition between the final and the initial item,  
 2506 the laws do the explanatory work. On some accounts, the link between the  
 2507 items plays no genuine explanatory role or does not have a lawlike structure.  
 2508 I will ignore them here.<sup>3</sup> We shall see, in any case, that my understanding of  
 2509 lawhood is extremely minimal. The triadic framework is less orthodox in the  
 2510 grounding literature than in the causal explanation literature. In the former,  
 2511 it is associated with the works of Schaffer (2016, 2017), Litland (2017), Bader  
 2512 (2017), Kment (2014), Glazier (2016), and Rosen (2017).

2513 In our series  $(u_i)_i$ , each item  $u_{i+1}$  explains, along with the law  $L_i$ , the an-  
 2514 tecedent item  $u_i$ . Once laws are introduced, it is natural to wonder whether  
 2515 some laws can themselves be explained by more basic laws (as when we  
 2516 explain the laws of thermodynamics by those of statistical mechanics). Anal-  
 2517 ogously, and this hypothesis shall prove very important in what follows, we

2 So, the final item explains the initial item (and not the other way around). The terminology is a bit awkward here, but it has to be so because the main focus of this paper is infinite *descending* chains of explanations.

3 As emphasized by Schaffer (2017, 308), it is difficult for these accounts to understand the role explanations play in making sense of the world.

2518 might wonder whether laws can explain some items all by themselves, that  
 2519 is, without the final item—call that cases of zero-explanation or pure-law-  
 2520 explanation.<sup>4</sup> In the literature on the “sublime question”—*Why is there any-*  
 2521 *thing? Why this?*—many atheists have, for example, looked for answers that  
 2522 only mention laws (see Nozick 1981, chap. II; Leslie 1979). In a couple of re-  
 2523 cent articles, Kappes (2022, 2023) distinguishes a restrictive sense of “explain”  
 2524 (in which only the initial item) from a more inclusive sense of explain (in  
 2525 which laws can also be said to explain something). He also argues that the  
 2526 first one corresponds more closely to because-statements. I am not completely  
 2527 sure about this last linguistic claim, but if there really are two senses here to  
 2528 differentiate, then it is definitely the inclusive sense I will be using throughout  
 2529 this article.

2530 The triadic structure of explanation also allows us to make a distinction  
 2531 that we have omitted and that can prove useful in certain contexts. If we want  
 2532 to be very rigorous, we should not identify, as we have until now, a series of  
 2533 items such as  $(u_i)_{i \in I}$  in which items are explained by their successor, with a  
 2534 chain of explanations. A chain of explanations is rather a series of items and  
 2535 a series of laws accounting for the transitions between items (or, equivalently  
 2536 from a formal point of view, a series of triplets containing a final item, a law,  
 2537 and an initial item). For convenience, the laws are often left implicit when  
 2538 they are not the target of our explanation or when we are not dealing with  
 2539 zero-explanations. We will follow this convention and often talk as if our  
 2540 series of items  $(u_i)_i$  were, by itself, a chain of explanation.

2541 With this triadic characterization of explanation, we can also define *com-*  
 2542 *plete* chains of explanations a bit more precisely. As I have used the term,  
 2543 a chain of explanation is complete when it leaves nothing to be explained  
 2544 (concerning the chain of explanation) except the laws. We can call “ultimate”  
 2545 or “supercomplete” a chain of explanations that leaves nothing at all to be  
 2546 explained (concerning the chain of explanation), not even the laws it relies  
 2547 on.

2548 Unfortunately, these definitions are neither very informative nor very useful  
 2549 by themselves. It is probably hard to see, while reading them, why there should  
 2550 be some non-wellfounded series of explanations that are not complete (and  
 2551 Hume is widely held to have claimed that there could be none; see Rowe  
 2552 1970). We shall see that this is not the case, but it will take a bit of work.

---

4 Authors who deny that grounding involves laws nevertheless have an analogon of our “meta-physical explanation by the laws alone,” namely, what Fine (2012) calls zero-grounding.

### 2553 Leibniz's Argument Against Complete Non-wellfounded 2554 Explanations

2555 Leibniz has put forward what I take to be the most interesting argument  
2556 against the completeness of non-wellfounded explanations. Although Leibniz  
2557 is not exactly concerned with what we call “causal explanations” or “meta-  
2558 physical explanations,” but rather with “explanations by reasons” (which  
2559 seems to include causal and teleological explanations), we shall see later that  
2560 his argument (and my reply to it) have purely causal and ground-theoretic  
2561 analogs.

#### 3<sub>62</sub>1 *Against the Completeness of Infinite Explanations*

2563 While exposing his version of the cosmological argument, to the effect that  
2564 there must be a complete explanation of things and that these necessarily  
2565 involve God, Leibniz puts forward an objection against the idea that infinite  
2566 chains of explanations could be complete.

2567 Let us imagine the book on the *Elements of Geometry* to have been  
2568 eternal, one copy always being made from another; then it is clear  
2569 that though we can give a reason for the present book based on  
2570 the preceding book from which it was copied, we can never arrive  
2571 at a complete reason, no matter how many books we may assume  
2572 in the past, for one can always wonder why such books should  
2573 have existed at all times; why there should be books at all, and  
2574 why they should be written in this way. (Leibniz 1989, 486)

2575 Why does Leibniz think that this explanation is incomplete? Prima facie, one  
2576 might think that his three questions can be answered easily by the proposed in-  
2577 finite explanation. “Why [should] such books [...] have existed at all times[?]”  
2578 Well, for each book, we can answer that it exists because of a former copy  
2579 and because of a scribe who copied it. This, it seems, can provide a satisfying  
2580 answer. “Why [should] there [...] be books at all[?]” Well, because the scribes  
2581 are instructed to make books out of other books. “Why [should] they [...] be  
2582 written in this way[?]” Because the scribes are instructed to make faithful  
2583 copies of the book they are given.

2584 The key to understanding Leibniz's objection, I take it, is to distinguish *each*  
2585 *book in the series* (Leibniz's “present book” and “preceding book”) from *the*

2586 *whole series of books* (Leibniz’s “such books [...] have existed at all times”). In  
 2587 Leibniz’s example, each book copy is explained in terms of its successor in the  
 2588 series (and the law that specifies the behavior of the scribes). But the whole  
 2589 series of books isn’t. Indeed, it could be the case that each scribe faithfully  
 2590 copies the next book, as specified by the law, but that the books are all copies  
 2591 of the Bible rather than the *Elements of Geometry*. This suggests that the  
 2592 infinite explanation here does not explain why we have an infinite series of  
 2593 the *Elements of Geometry* rather than an infinite series of the Bible. But if this  
 2594 is so, it clearly leaves something unexplained, then, namely, the whole series  
 2595 itself.<sup>5</sup>

2596 Another reason one might want to add in order to deny that the explanation  
 2597 is complete is that the latter can explain the content of the book copies but  
 2598 not, say, whether they are made of paper or parchment, the color of the  
 2599 cover, or even that they exist—call that the extra-property objection. I’m not  
 2600 sure, however, that this second objection against the completeness of the  
 2601 explanation is really decisive. For it could easily be answered by enriching the  
 2602 laws and specifying that the scribes make a book copy *of the same material,*  
 2603 *the same color, and with the same book cover* as the book he is given and that  
 2604 *they make it out of an infinite stock of material and ink,* or even out of nothing.  
 2605 These additions would allow one to explain the material, the color of the  
 2606 cover, and the existence of *each* book copy given the next one. It would not,  
 2607 however, allow one to explain why *the whole series* is made of white paper  
 2608 or even exists, but that is another problem. It is, in fact, the very problem we  
 2609 have dealt with in the preceding paragraph.

2610 This second, extra-property objection could equally be answered by specifying  
 2611 the target of the explanation more precisely than Leibniz did and claiming  
 2612 that the items of the series are not full books but merely the content of book  
 2613 copies (understood as facts of the form “The content of book #*i* is that of the  
 2614 *Elements of Geometry*”), or even, if you are really suspicious about explanations  
 2615 of existence,<sup>6</sup> by claiming that they are conditional facts concerning the

5 We thus have a simple counter-example to the so-called Hume-Edwards principle to the effect that the whole is sufficiently explained in explaining the cause of the parts (Hume 1907). The name of the principle comes from Rowe (1970). See Billon (2023, 1938, especially n. 7); see for a defense of the Hume-Edwards principle against other objections, Şimşek (2023, sec. 3).

6 A referee for this journal suggests that laws being abstract, they cannot explain the existence of concrete objects. I agree that the fact that abstract laws can regiment concrete events can seem puzzling, but I am not sure that this puzzle concerns existence specifically (how can Newton’s laws “act on” this rock to make it fall on the ground?). There is, in fact, a long and influential tradition of positing laws or principles to explain existence (see Leslie 1979; 2003—and the

2616 content of book copies (such as ‘If book copy # $i$  exists, its content is that of  
 2617 the *Elements of Geometry*’). Either by enriching the laws or by impoverishing  
 2618 the items, we can easily dispose of the extra-property objection.

2619 We can now conclude this discussion of Leibniz’s infinite scribes case  
 2620 with two important conclusions. First, in order to be complete, a series of  
 2621 explanations  $(u_i)_i$  must explain not only each item of the series from its  
 2622 successor but also the whole series itself from the laws alone. Conversely, of  
 2623 course, a chain of explanation that explains the whole series of items will  
 2624 be complete—what is left to explain but the laws once the whole series is  
 2625 explained? So,

2626 COMPLETE EXPLANATION. A chain of explanation  $(u_i)_i$  is complete  
 2627 if it explains not only each item from its successor but also the whole  
 2628 series  $(u_i)_i$  from the laws alone.

2629 This is already an interesting characterization of completeness. It shall prove  
 2630 quite useful.

2631 Second, some infinite chains of explanations are not complete. This is the  
 2632 case of the *Infinite Scribes* series, which we can reconstruct as follows:

2633 *Infinite Scribes.* Consider an infinite series of book copies. Book copy  
 2634 #1 is a copy of the *Elements of Geometry*; its content is explained by  
 2635 the fact that it was copied before by a scribe from an older book copy  
 2636 #2. This older book copy #2 is a copy of the *Elements of Geometry*;  
 2637 its content is explained by the fact that it was copied, before, by a  
 2638 scribe from a yet older book copy #3, and so on to infinity... where a  
 2639 scribe is someone who makes a faithful copy of the book he is given.

2640 Here,  $u_i$  is the fact that book copy # $i$  (i.e., the book copy that appears  
 2641 at stage # $i$ ) is the *Elements of Geometry*. And the law  $L_i$  specifies  
 2642 the behavior of the scribe # $i$ : he makes a new book with the same  
 2643 content as the next book (as all scribes behave in the same way, all  
 2644 the  $L_i$ s are actually identical).

---

historical references within—on the axiarchic principle; or Nozick 1981, chap. II on the principle of fecundity), a tradition that still has quite respectable representatives today (Parfit 2011, 623–648 is a notorious example).

### 3.2 *Against the Completeness of Circular Explanations*

2646 Interestingly, this objection to the completeness of infinite explanations gen-  
2647 eralizes to circular explanations:

2648 *Circular Scribes.* Consider two book copies. Book copy #1 is a copy  
2649 of the *Elements of Geometry*; its content is explained by the fact that  
2650 it was copied in 1999 by a scribe from book copy #2. Book copy  
2651 #2 is also a copy of the *Elements of Geometry*, and its content is  
2652 explained by the fact that it was copied yesterday from book copy  
2653 #1 by a scribe who then traveled through time to 1999 with book  
2654 copy #2.

2655 Here,  $u_i$  and  $L_i$  are the same as in the *Infinite Scribes* case.

2656 Again, this circular explanation is not complete because the specified behavior  
2657 of the scribes (i.e., the laws) explains why both books have the same content,  
2658 not why this content is that of the *Elements of Geometry* rather than, say, that  
2659 of the Bible. And it fails to explain that because it leaves it open whether both  
2660 books are copies of the *Elements of Geometry* or, say, the Bible. It does not  
2661 determine that they are copies of the *Elements of Geometry*.

### 3.3 *What About Well-Founded Explanations?*

2663 Of course, as Bliss and Priest rightly point out in another context, we might  
2664 get an incomplete explanation in the well-founded (finite, non-circular) case  
2665 as well:

2666 *Well-Founded Scribes (Ordinary Case).* Consider a series of  $n$  book  
2667 copies. Book copy #1 is a copy of the *Elements of Geometry*; its  
2668 content is explained by the fact that it was copied before by a scribe  
2669 from an older book copy #2. This older book copy #2 is a copy of  
2670 the *Elements of Geometry*; its content is explained by the fact that it  
2671 was copied before by a scribe from a yet older book copy #3, and so  
2672 on unto  $n$ .

2673 Here,  $u_i$  and  $L_i$  are the same as in the *Infinite Scribes* case.



2674 The content of each book copy  $\#i$ , where  $i < n$ , is fully explained in terms of  
2675 its successor, but the content of book  $\#n$  is left unexplained, so the explanation  
2676 is incomplete. The case, in that respect, is exactly similar to that of the *Infinite*  
2677 *Scribes*. Leibniz would have agreed. He believed, however, that there is a  
2678 special item, namely, God, that is self-explanatory because He literally explains  
2679 Himself. Others have argued that although they are not really self-explanatory,  
2680 some items are “autonomous” in that they do not call for an explanation  
2681 (Dasgupta 2016).

2682 If there are autonomous or self-explanatory items, we might have a complete  
2683 explanation in the finite, non-circular case. Just consider the *Well-*  
2684 *Founded Scribes* (Extraordinary Case), which is exactly like the above ordinary  
2685 case except that the book copy  $\#n$  is very special: its content either literally  
2686 explains itself or is at least autonomous.

2687 I do not want to dispute that this toy example involving self-explanatory  
2688 book content is implausible. I want to grant, however, that there might be  
2689 plausible examples of the same form as this one. My claim is that despite  
2690 Leibniz’s contention, *some* infinite—and, more generally, non-wellfounded—  
2691 explanations are complete.

#### 2692 4 Answering Leibniz’s Objection

2693 It is not difficult to modify our Leibnizian *Infinite Scribes* example to get a  
2694 complete series. For a trivial case, consider what happens if we replace our  
2695 faithful, regular scribes with *monomaniacal scribes*, i.e., scribes who, instead  
2696 of making a faithful copy of the book they are given, always create a copy  
2697 of the *Elements of Geometry*, whatever book copy they are given (they are so  
2698 monomaniacal that they do so even if they are given no book at all).

2699 In that case, the explanation does seem complete. The whole series, indeed,  
2700 seems to be explained. Why? Because by explaining each transition (i.e.,  
2701 simply by mentioning the laws specifying the behavior of the scribes), one  
2702 seems to explain why each book has the content it has. Unlike in Leibniz’s  
2703 *Infinite Scribes* case, what explains these transitions, namely, the behavior  
2704 of monomaniacal scribes (the laws alone), does determine each item of the  
2705 series. Actually, it necessitates them: necessarily, if all the scribes behave as  
2706 specified, all books must be copies of the *Elements of Geometry*.

2707 One might wonder whether this explanation really explains the existence  
2708 (as opposed to the mere content) of the series of book copies (this is related  
2709 to what we have called earlier the “extra-property objection”). Does it really

2710 explain the whole series of facts  $(u_i)_i$ , where  $u_i =$  ‘book copy # $i$  is the *Elements*  
 2711 *of Geometry*’, or rather the series of conditional facts  $(u'_i)_i$ , where  $u'_i =$  ‘if book  
 2712 copy # $i$  exists, it is the *Elements of Geometry*’? The answer is that it really  
 2713 explains the whole series  $(u_i)_i$  (and the implied existence claims) because we  
 2714 have specified in the laws that monomaniacal scribes always create a copy of  
 2715 the *Elements of Geometry*, whatever book copy they are given, *and do so even*  
 2716 *when they are given no book at all*. Had we not specified that in the laws, only  
 2717 the series of conditional truths would still be completely explained anyway.

2718 The *Infinite Monomaniacal Scribes* is somehow trivial. There are more  
 2719 interesting examples of infinite chains of explanations that seem likewise  
 2720 complete. Consider:

2721 *Infinite Stick Adjusters*. Consider the infinite series of lengths  $(l_i)_i$   
 2722 of a given stick made out of a plastic lump. Given the number of  
 2723 molecules in the plastic lump, the length of the stick is bounded  
 2724 by  $b$  and  $B$ . Let  $l$  be a specific length between  $b$  and  $B$ . The length  
 2725  $l_1$  of the stick at stage #1 is explained by the fact that the stick has  
 2726 been adjusted before at stage #2 by a stick adjuster from a state in  
 2727 which it had length  $l_2$ , which length is explained by the fact that it  
 2728 has been adjusted earlier at stage #3 by another stick adjuster from  
 2729 a state in which it has length  $l_3$ , and so on to infinity..., where a stick  
 2730 adjuster is someone who takes a stick of length  $x$  and adjusts it so  
 2731 that its size becomes closer to a specific length  $l$  (where  $b < l < B$ ):

- 2732 (i) If  $l \leq x \leq B$ , the stick adjuster compresses it in order to reduce its size  
 2733 by  $\frac{x-l}{2}$  (so that its size becomes  $x - \frac{x-l}{2}$ ).
- 2734 (ii) If  $b \leq x \leq l$ , the stick adjuster stretches it in order to augment its size  
 2735 by  $\frac{l-x}{2}$  (so that its size becomes  $x + \frac{l-x}{2}$ ).

2736 Here,  $L_i$  is the law that specifies the behavior of the stick adjuster at  
 2737 stage # $i$ , and  $u_i$  is the fact ‘if the stick exists at stage # $i$ , it has length  
 2738  $l_i$ ’.

2739 It takes little reflection to realize that necessarily if the stick adjusters behave  
 2740 as specified and if the stick exists at all, the stick will always be exactly  $l$   
 2741 long. This can be deduced from the laws that specify the behavior of the stick  
 2742 adjusters alone. Intuitively, stick adjusters keep adjusting the stick to make its  
 2743 length closer and closer to  $l$ , and if you start with a finite stick, you will end

2744 up, at the limit, with an  $l$ -long stick. But as each stick in the series is bounded  
 2745 and has infinitely many stick adjusters behind him, each stick will be  $l$ -long.  
 2746 More rigorously, the laws entail that  $l_{i+j} = l + 2^j(l_i - l)$ , so if for some  $i$ ,  $l_i$  were  
 2747 different from  $l$ , the series  $(l_{i+j})_{j \geq 1}$  would not be bounded, which is absurd  
 2748 by construction (unless otherwise mentioned indexes are natural numbers  
 2749 greater than or equal to one). This infinite explanation thus determines that  
 2750 the stick is always  $l$ -long—it does not leave the length of the sticks open. It  
 2751 accordingly seems to explain the whole series and, thus, everything there is  
 2752 to explain. It is arguably complete.<sup>7</sup>

2753 We can come up with other, maybe simpler, examples of non-trivial com-  
 2754 plete infinite explanations. Consider the *Infinite Wheel Turners*.

2755 *Infinite Wheel Turners*. Take a wheel that is divided into four identi-  
 2756 cal numbered sectors (respectively 0, 1, 2, 3). The sector  $s_1$  on which  
 2757 the wheel has just landed is 1 because the wheel has just been turned  
 2758 by a first wheel turner at the beginning of stage #1 from a former  
 2759 sector  $s_2$ . It was in that sector because the wheel had been turned at  
 2760 the beginning of stage #2 by a second wheel turner from a former  
 2761 sector  $s_3, \dots$ , where a wheel turner is someone who takes a wheel that  
 2762 has landed on sector  $x$  ( $x \in \mathbb{Z}/4\mathbb{Z}$ ) and turns it so that it lands on  
 2763 sector  $f(x) = 2x - 1$  ( $f(x) \in \mathbb{Z}/4\mathbb{Z}$ ).

2764 Here,  $u_i$  is the fact that the wheel, if it exists, has landed on sector  $s_i$   
 2765 at the end of stage # $i$ . And  $L_i$  is the law specifying the behavior of  
 2766 the wheel turner # $i$  (again, the laws are all identical).

2767 As  $f(0) = f(2) = 3$ ,  $f(3) = 1$ , and  $f(1) = 1$ ,

- 2768 • if the wheel lands on 1, it will always stay on 1 when it is turned again;
- 2769 • and the wheel will always land on one (whatever the starting point),
- 2770 provided that it has been turned at least twice.

---

7 The reader worried by the “extra-property objection” regarding existence can check that we can get a version of the *Infinite Stick Adjusters* where  $u_i$ s are uncontroversially existence-implicating facts about the length of a stick rather than more modest truths that are conditional on the existence of the stick simply by stipulating that the stick adjusters *create* a copy of the stick they are given and then stretch it.

2771 So for all  $i$ ,  $s_i = 1$ . This, moreover, holds necessarily, provided that the wheel  
 2772 turners act as specified. This explanation accordingly seems to explain every-  
 2773 thing there is to explain. It seems complete.

2774 The reader can check that just as the Leibnizian incomplete *Infinite Scribes*  
 2775 series has a circular incomplete counterpart, all these examples of complete  
 2776 infinite explanations have circular counterparts that are complete (just add a  
 2777 time-travel twist to the stories).

2778 Finally, there is an interesting contrast to be drawn between the *Infinite*  
 2779 *Stick Adjusters* case on the one hand and the *Infinite Wheel Turners* and  
 2780 the *Infinite Monomaniacal Scribes* on the other. Infinity or circularity (non-  
 2781 wellfoundedness) indeed seems somehow more important to the complete-  
 2782 ness of the explanation in the first case than in the two others. Indeed, the  
 2783 reader can check that in a simple well-founded version  $(u_1, u_2, \dots, u_n)$  of the  
 2784 *Infinite Monomaniacal Scribes* case, the laws alone suffice to explain, if not  
 2785 the whole series, at least its  $n - 1$  first items  $(u_1, u_2, \dots, u_{n-1})$ . Roughly the  
 2786 same goes for the *Infinite Wheel Turners* if  $n \geq 4$ : the laws alone will suffice  
 2787 to explain the  $n - 3$  first items. In the *Infinite Stick Adjusters* case, however,  
 2788 unless our series of items is infinite or circular, even the length of the first  
 2789 stick will not be determined and explained. If the series is long enough, then  
 2790 at stage #1, the stick will necessarily be rather close to being  $l$ -long; its precise  
 2791 length will not, however, be determined by the laws. We can say that in the  
 2792 first case but not in the others, the completeness of our series of explanations  
 2793 is, so to speak, “entirely due to non-wellfoundedness.”

2794 Cases of complete, non-wellfounded explanations, and even more dramati-  
 2795 cally, cases in which the completeness is entirely due to non-wellfoundedness,  
 2796 show something very important, namely, that far from always being a liability,  
 2797 infinity and circularity can be explanatory productive and play an essential  
 2798 role in some explanations. We can draw an analogy here with proof theory.  
 2799 Despite a widespread assumption to the contrary, mathematicians do some-  
 2800 times use circular or infinitely descending proofs in arithmetic. This is, for  
 2801 example, the most natural way to understand the so-called “proofs by infinite  
 2802 descent” (Fermat’s proof of the irrationality of  $\sqrt{2}$  is a classical example, and  
 2803 so is the classical proof of Euclid’s division lemma<sup>8</sup>). Now, it can be shown  
 2804 that allowing such “non-wellfounded proofs” in Robinson Arithmetics yields

---

8 Euclid’s division lemma states that for two integers  $a$  and  $b$ , with  $b \neq 0$ , there exist unique integers  $q$  and  $r$  such that  $a = bq + r$  and  $0 \leq r < b$ .

2805 classical Peano arithmetics (Simpson 2017).<sup>9</sup> In the guise of infinity and circularity, non-wellfoundedness is proof-theoretically productive. Cases like  
 2806 that of the *Infinite Stick Adjusters* show that what goes for proofs goes for  
 2807 explanations as well. Far from being an obstacle to good explanations, as  
 2808 suggested by the quotations of Fine and Schaffer,<sup>10</sup> infinity and circularity  
 2809 can do genuine explanatory work, but they will only do so in very specific  
 2810 cases. I would now like to find out what exactly distinguishes these cases.  
 2811

## 2815 5 Towards a General Case: Causal Explanations

2813 All the examples of complete, non-wellfounded explanations we have given  
 2814 above imply *causal explanations*. Below, I will try to get more general re-  
 2815 sults. I will first abstract general conditions on the completeness of causal  
 2816 explanations from the examples above and then show that the reasoning that  
 2817 yielded these conditions generalizes to metaphysical explanation and other  
 2818 “determination relations.”

2819 We can notice, first, that in all the examples above, the  $i$ -th item seems  
 2820 functionally determined by the  $(i + 1)$ -th item. There is, in other words, a  
 2821 function  $f_i$  (depending on the law  $L_i$ ) that accounts for the transition from  
 2822 the  $(i + 1)$ -th item to the  $i$ -th item.<sup>11</sup> More precisely, in all of these cases,

- 2823 • there is a parameter that can take different values at different stages  
 2824 (the content of the book, the size of the stick, etc.),
- 2825 • such that the value of this parameter at stage  $\#i$  is the result of applying  
 2826 the function  $f_i$  to the value of this parameter at stage  $\#(i + 1)$ .

2827 We can represent this functional dependence by introducing a series of func-  
 2828 tions  $(X_i)_i$ , where  $X_i$  associates to a possible world the value the  $\#i$ -th item  
 2829 of the series takes in this world and  $\emptyset$  if the  $\#i$ -th item does not exist in this  
 2830 world. Let us also introduce the symbol  $\circ$  for the composition of functions  
 2831 ( $f \circ g$  is the function that associates  $f(g(x))$  to  $x$ ). Then, it seems that in all  
 2832 the cases we have envisioned so far,

9 I am indebted to Léon Probst for the discovery of this very interesting result and for the realization that proofs by infinite descent can be naturally interpreted as non-wellfounded proofs.

10 Schaffer and Fine are concerned with metaphysical explanations rather than causal explanations, but we will see that there are ground-theoretic analogs of the *Infinite Stick Adjusters* cases.

11 It should be emphasized that here, “function” is understood in the mathematical sense, where a function is just a relation  $R$ , such that if  $xRy$  and  $xRz$ , then  $y = z$  (rather than as a causal role or as a trait selected by evolution for its causal role).

- 2833 •  $u_i$  has the form ‘ $X_i(@) = x_i$ ’ (where @ is the actual world and single  
2834 quotes are a “fact formation device”), or in cases where the fact  $u_i$  is  
2835 conditional on existence, ‘Either  $X_i(@) = \emptyset$  or  $X_i(@) = x_i$ ’.
- 2836 • There is a function  $f_i$ , such that  $X_i = f \circ X_{i+1}$  (i.e., if the value of  $X_{i+1}$   
2837 in a world is  $a$ , then the value of  $X_i$  in this world is  $b = f(a)$ ).

2838 We can call  $f_i$  “the flow function” of the series.<sup>12</sup> In all of our examples above,  
2839  $f_1 = f_2 = \dots = f_i = \dots = f$ , and  $L_1 = L_2 = \dots = L_i = \dots = L$ , and we  
2840 might say that the flow and the explanation are *uniform*. We could, however,  
2841 construct explanations that are not uniform (say, by stipulating that some,  
2842 but not all, scribes do not copy their book faithfully; see Billon 2023, 1942).

2843 In the regular *Infinite Scribes* case,  $f = f_{RS}$  is the identity function  $Id$   
2844 over book contents; in the *Infinite Monomaniacal Scribes* case,  $f = f_{MS}$  is  
2845 the constant function that associates the content of the book, which is the  
2846 *Elements of Geometry*, to any content and even to the empty content of absent  
2847 books. In the *Infinite Stick Adjusters* case,  $f = f_{SA}$  associates the length  $x - \frac{x-1}{2}$   
2848 to the length  $x$ ; in the *Infinite Wheel Turners* case,  $f = f_{WT}$  associates the  
2849 sector  $(2x - 1)[4]$  to the sector  $x \dots$

2850 In all the examples we have considered, there is also a natural metric  
2851 associated with the values of our  $X_i$ s. We can thus define a notion of distance  
2852 and a notion of convergence on these values. I will argue that in cases such as  
2853 these, the following conditions are both necessary for the non-wellfounded  
2854 chain of explanation to be complete:

- 2855 (CN1)  $f$  has a unique fixed point  $e$  (i.e., there is a unique value  $x$  of  $f$ , such  
2856 that  $x = f(x)$  and  $x = e$ ).
- 2857 (CN2) For all  $x$ , the series  $(f^i(x))_i$  converges toward the same item  $e$ .

2858 I will also argue that, conversely, the two following conditions are jointly  
2859 sufficient:<sup>13</sup>

- 2860 (CS1)  $f$  is contractive: there is  $k < 1$ , such that for all  $x, y$ ,  $|f(x) - f(y)| \leq$   
2861  $k * |x - y|$ .
- 2862 (CS2)  $f$  is bounded.

---

12 I borrow the term from dynamical system theory, which should make sense by the end of the paper (section 9).

13 For these conditions to hold, we need to suppose that our metric space is “complete” (in the sense that every Cauchy sequence—intuitively, every sequence whose items can become arbitrarily close to each other—has a limit), which is unproblematic in all the examples we consider.

2863 Intuitively, (CS<sub>1</sub>) means that  $f$  shrinks the space.

2864 These conditions fit most examples above: (CN<sub>1</sub>) and (CN<sub>2</sub>) are only sat-  
 2865 isfied by the *Infinite Wheel Turners*, the *Infinite Monomaniacal Scribes*, and  
 2866 the *Infinite Stick Adjusters*; they are not satisfied in the *Circular Scribes* and  
 2867 *Infinite Scribes* cases. (CS<sub>1</sub>–CS<sub>2</sub>) are satisfied in the *Infinite Stick Adjusters*  
 2868 example but not in the *Infinite Wheel Turners* example (at least when  $\mathbb{Z}/4\mathbb{Z}$  is  
 2869 fitted with the canonical metric, i.e., the distance between two points being  
 2870 the absolute value of their difference), which shows that (CS<sub>1</sub>–CS<sub>2</sub>) are not  
 2871 necessary.

2872 By reflecting on an unbounded variant of the *Infinite Stick Adjusters* case,  
 2873 the reader can also check that (CS<sub>1</sub>) is insufficient by itself (i.e., without (CS<sub>2</sub>))  
 2874 and that (CN<sub>1</sub>–CN<sub>2</sub>) are jointly insufficient. In that unbounded variant, for  
 2875 any arbitrary length  $l_1$ , we can construct a series of sticks such that stick # $i$  is  
 2876  $l_i$ -long and has been adjusted from stick # $(i + 1)$  by one of our stick adjusters.  
 2877 Just take sticks such that  $l_i = l + 2^{i-1}(l_1 - l)$ . Accordingly, the fact that each  
 2878 item of a series is the length of a stick that has been adjusted by our next stick  
 2879 adjuster *does not determine the length  $l_1$  of the first stick*, and it does not, a  
 2880 fortiori, determine the whole series of lengths. But if it does not determine it,  
 2881 it seems that it won't explain it either.

2882 The argument for the necessary character of (CN<sub>1</sub>) and (CN<sub>2</sub>), and for  
 2883 the joint sufficient character of (CS<sub>1</sub>–CS<sub>2</sub>), involves two parts. It has a philo-  
 2884 sophical component first, connecting the notions of explanation and com-  
 2885 pleteness to that of functional dependence and translating the claim that a  
 2886 non-wellfounded causal explanation is complete in mathematical terms. It  
 2887 also includes a mathematical component, demonstrating that the translated  
 2888 claim holds when (CS<sub>1</sub>–CS<sub>2</sub>) are satisfied and only holds when (CN<sub>1</sub>–CN<sub>2</sub>)  
 2889 are satisfied. The mathematical part of the argument is non-trivial, but it  
 2890 is philosophically uninteresting, so I will place it in the appendix. Now, I  
 2891 will slowly unfold the philosophical part of the argument, pausing at some  
 2892 interesting concepts that need to be introduced along the way.

### 5<sup>331</sup> *Insensitivity to Prior Items*

2894 To say that a chain of explanations  $(u_i)_{i \in I}$  is complete, as we have seen, is to  
 2895 say that it (fully) explains the whole series  $(u_i)_{i \in I}$ . In the non-wellfounded  
 2896 case, this means that by explaining the transitions from  $u_{i+1}$  to  $u_i$ , we fully  
 2897 explain the whole series  $(u_i)_{i \in I}$ . This, in turn, seems equivalent to saying

2898 that what explains the transitions from  $u_{i+1}$  to  $u_i$  (i.e., the laws  $(L_i)_i$ ) fully  
 2899 zero-explains the whole series  $(u_i)_{i \in I}$ .

2900 This means that in all cases of non-wellfounded, complete explanations, the  
 2901 laws  $(L_i)_i$  alone will suffice to explain the first item  $u_1$ . Accordingly, the history  
 2902  $(u_2, u_3, \dots)$  of the first item will be explanatorily irrelevant. Complete, non-  
 2903 wellfounded causal explanations will display a form of “historical irrelevance”  
 2904 or “insensitivity to prior items.”

## 5<sub>02</sub> The Explanation-Determination Condition

2906 In order to show that the Leibnizian infinite explanation is incomplete, we  
 2907 have argued that it does not *determine* the whole series. In order to show that  
 2908 the *Infinite Monomaniacal Scribes*, the *Infinite Stick Adjusters*, and the *Infinite*  
 2909 *Wheel Turners* are complete, we have argued that these chains of explanations  
 2910 do determine all the items of the series.

2911 We have relied on the following explanation-determination conditions to  
 2912 the effect that the Leibnizian *Infinite Scribes* series fails to be complete because  
 2913 and *only because* it fails to determine all their terms:

2914 (ED<sub>1</sub>) In order to be complete, chains of explanation, such as the Leibnizian  
 2915 *Infinite Scribes* series, need to determine all their terms.

2916 (ED<sub>2</sub>) If a similar chain of explanations did determine all its terms, it would  
 2917 be complete.

2918 I tackle (ED<sub>1</sub>) and (ED<sub>2</sub>) in turn.

2919 (ED<sub>1</sub>) stems from the fact that (full) explanation is a *determination relation*,  
 2920 so that a (full) explanans (a final item) must, along with a law, *determine* its  
 2921 explanandum (an initial item). This is true for determinist explanations. One  
 2922 might worry this does not hold for non-determinist explanations, as found, e.g.,  
 2923 in quantum mechanics. However, non-determinist explanations are arguably  
 2924 explanations in which the probability distribution of a variable (if not its  
 2925 effective value) *is* determined—this is what happens in quantum mechanics.  
 2926 So (ED<sub>1</sub>) is still arguably true in the non-determinist case, provided that we  
 2927 consider the explananda to be probability distributions.

2928 Let us now move on to (ED<sub>2</sub>). It captures the idea that the only reason why  
 2929 the Leibnizian *Infinite Scribes* series is not complete is that it fails with regard  
 2930 to (ED<sub>1</sub>). Importantly, (ED<sub>2</sub>) does not imply that determination suffices for a  
 2931 full explanation: there are classical counterexamples to this claim, involving



2932 asymmetry, overdetermination, or “pre-emption”; see Billon (2023, sec. 6).  
 2933 It only implies (and, in fact, it means) that if a series of explanations  $(u_i)_i$  is  
 2934 such that the laws determine the full series, then the explanation is complete.  
 2935 And this claim is arguably true because when we talk about explanations of a  
 2936 series of items  $(u_i)_i$  by laws, obstacles to the entailment from determination  
 2937 to explanation, such as asymmetry, pre-emption, and overdetermination, are  
 2938 not a real threat. The question of asymmetry does not even make sense in  
 2939 this context (the laws are not an explanandum here). As for the question of  
 2940 pre-emption and over-determination, they might make sense in cases where  
 2941 the laws are not uniform. Yet, if the laws determined the whole series but did  
 2942 not explain it because of pre-emption or overdetermination, a proper subset  
 2943 of the laws would arguably explain the whole series, and we would still have  
 2944 a complete explanation of the series.

2945 Now, (ED1) and (ED2) entail that in our examples, the series we consider  
 2946 is complete iff (B) follows from (A):

2947 (A) For all  $i$ ,  $u_{i+1}$  (along with  $L_i$ ) fully explains  $u_i$ .

2948 (B) The laws  $(L_i)_i$  alone determine the whole series  $(u_i)_{i \in I}$ .

2949 Now, it is arguable that if there is something in (A) that can entail a determi-  
 2950 nation condition such as (B), it is only the following determination condition  
 2951 that is entailed by (A):

2952 (A\*) For all  $i$ ,  $u_{i+1}$  (along with  $L_i$ ) determines  $u_i$ .

2953 If that is so (and I will admit that it is), (B) follows from (A) iff it follows (B)  
 2954 from (A\*). That is, iff

2955 COMPLETENESS CONDITION (First Version). That for all  $i$ , each  
 2956 item  $u_{i+1}$  (along with  $L_i$ ) determines its antecedent  $u_i$  entails that  
 2957 the series of laws  $(L_i)_i$  determines the series of items  $(u_i)_{i \in I}$ .

### 538 *The Functional Account of Determination*

2959 One might wonder how we should analyze the sense of “determine” in the  
 2960 claim that explanation entails determination and in our first completeness  
 2961 condition. I must say it is very tempting to analyze it in terms of necessity (this  
 2962 is a temptation to which I have informally yielded a couple of times above,  
 2963 using modal considerations to assess determination claims). We might want

2964 to claim, for example, that an initial item determines a final item only if it  
 2965 necessitates it. This corresponds to what we might call the “strong functional  
 2966 account of determination.” If  $U_i$  is a function that associates with a possible  
 2967 world the value the  $i$ -th item of the series takes in this world ( $U_i$  associates  $u_i$   
 2968 to our world:  $U_i(@) = u_i$ ), this account of determination says that

2969 **STRONG FUNCTIONAL ACCOUNT OF DETERMINATION.** The  $(i + 1)$ -  
 2970 th item determines its antecedent (the  $i$ -th item) if there is a function  
 2971  $g_i$  (depending on  $L_i$ ) such that one of the following equivalent con-  
 2972 ditions is satisfied:

- 2973 (i)  $U_i = g_i \circ U_{i+1}$ .  
 2974 (ii) Necessarily, if the  $(i + 1)$ -th item  $U_{i+1}$  is  $a$  in some world, then the  $i$ -th  
 2975 item  $U_i$  is  $b = f(a)$  in that world.

2976 Even though I believe that determination can indeed be understood as neces-  
 2977 sitation and that it is useful to think of it that way in what follows, it is not  
 2978 totally uncontroversial to do so, and it is not, strictly speaking, required. We  
 2979 can provide a broader account of determination below: the *weak functional*  
 2980 *account of determination*. It relies on a weakening of the conditional (ii) so  
 2981 that it becomes (a–b):

2982 **WEAK FUNCTIONAL ACCOUNT OF DETERMINATION.** The  $(i + 1)$ -th  
 2983 item determines its antecedent (the  $i$ -th item) if there is a func-  
 2984 tion  $g_i$  (depending on  $L_i$ ) such that one of the following equivalent  
 2985 conditions is satisfied:

- 2986 (a)  $g_i(u_{i+1}) = u_i$ , and in close possible worlds where  $U_{i+1} = u_{i+1}$ , the value  
 2987 of  $U_i$  is still  $g_i(u_{i+1}) = u_i$ .  
 2988 (b) Had the (value of the)  $(i + 1)$ -th item been slightly different because  
 2989 of a local miracle (say equal to  $u'_{i+1}$ ), then the (value of the)  $i$ -th item  
 2990 would have been  $u'_i = g_i(u'_{i+1})$ .

2991 The weak functional account of determination construes it not as necessitation  
 2992 but merely as a counterfactually supporting functional relation. Notice that  
 2993 (a) and (b) are equivalent to claiming that  $U_i$  and  $g_i \circ U_{i+1}$  only coincide in a  
 2994 certain subset  $\Omega$  of all possible worlds (a subset that contains the actual world  
 2995 and very close worlds), i.e., that  $U_i|_{\Omega} = g_i \circ U_{i+1}|_{\Omega}$ .

2996 Why think that explanation must entail determination in this sense? Well,  
 2997 as far as causal explanations are concerned, good scientific explanations all  
 2998 seem underwritten by equations that yield, at least locally, a form of functional  
 2999 determination of this sort. Connectedly, the fact that causal explanations al-  
 3000 ways yield a functional determination in this sense is entailed by the structural  
 3001 equation account of the “structural equations framework” of causation and  
 3002 causal explanation (Menzies and Beebe 2019), which precisely stems from  
 3003 scientific practice (Schaffer 2016). It is equally entailed by the more general  
 3004 “functional conception” of explanatory laws (Schaffer 2017).<sup>14</sup> More deeply,  
 3005 the claim that causal explanation requires such a “functional determination”  
 3006 stems from the fact that a cause must determine its effect and that an explana-  
 3007 tion follows a law. (a) and (b) are arguably the minimal conditions capturing  
 3008 these two facts.<sup>15</sup>

3009 The reader who would not be convinced that either the conditions  
 3010 (ED<sub>1</sub>–ED<sub>2</sub>) or the functional account of determination universally hold  
 3011 should still grant that they hold rather generally (and, in particular, they  
 3012 hold in all the examples we have put forward until now and in those we will  
 3013 consider in what follows). This should be sufficient to maintain his interest  
 3014 in the conclusions of this paper.

---

14 The functional characterization of determination bears a strong resemblance to the structural equations framework of causation and the more general “functional conception” of explanatory laws (Schaffer 2017). There are important differences, though. First, my account is an account of determination, which I take to be a necessary condition of explanation, not an account of explanation itself. Moreover, as I understand them, both the structural equation framework and the functional conception of laws aim at accounting for the fact that the explained item *really depends* counterfactually on  $x$  (i.e., is sensitive to  $x$ ), and so they require (at least) that the function  $f$  be non-constant. My “functional account of determination,” on the other hand, is neutral regarding real counterfactual dependence and thus less demanding. It only aims at accounting for the fact that the explaining item determines the item it explains.

15 One might wonder why (b) and not just (a) is required to capture the idea that a cause determines its effect. (a) concerns the tokens  $u_{i+1}$  and  $u_i$  that happen to be the  $(i + 1)$ -th item and the  $i$ -th item in our world and requires that the latter token be modally fixed by the former. (b) concerns the types represented by the functions  $U_{i+1}$  and  $U_i$  and requires that the latter be determined by the former. Now suppose that condition (a) held but not condition (b): imagine that had  $U_{i+1}$  been  $u'_{i+1}$  ( $\neq u_i$ ), then  $U_i$  would have been indeterminate (say that it could equally have been many different token items and that there is no fact of the matter regarding which it would have been). In such a case, one might still claim that the token  $u_{i+1}$  causally explains the item  $u_i$ , but it would be hard to maintain that this causal explanation follows laws.

#### 5.4 A Mathematical Formulation of the Completeness Condition

The distinction between the weak and the strong version of the determination condition is important philosophically but not very important formally. In what follows, I will, for the sake of simplicity, suppose that our function  $(U_i)_i$  is only defined on  $\Omega$  and accordingly omit the restriction and consider that  $U_{i+1}$  determines  $U_i$  iff  $U_i = g_i \circ U_{i+1}$ .

Now, interestingly, when, like in all of our examples, the items are facts  $u_i$  of the form ' $X_i(@) = x_i$ ' or of the form 'Either  $X_i(@) = \emptyset$  or  $X_i = x_i$ ', it can be checked that the determination condition on  $(u_i)_i$  (there is  $g_i$  such that  $U_i = g_i \circ U_{i+1}$ ) is equivalent to the corresponding determination condition on  $(x_i)_i$ :

- There is  $f_i$  such that  $X_i = f_i \circ X_{i+1}$ ,
- where  $f_i$  is exactly what we have called before the "flow function."

Using these conventions (with capital letters for functions other than  $f_i$  and  $f$ , and with the associated minuscules for the items that are their values), we can recapitulate:

- The item  $\#(i + 1)$  (along with  $L_i$ ) determines the item  $\#i$

means that

- there is a function  $f_i$  (that depends on  $L_i$ ) such that  $X_i = f_i \circ X_{i+1}$ .

(In our examples, the explanations are uniform, so neither  $L_i$  nor  $f_i$  really depends on—i.e., is sensitive to—the index  $i$ .)

Similarly, to say that

- the laws  $(L_i)_i$  determine each  $u_i$  in  $(u_i)_{i \in I}$  *all by themselves*

means that

- there is a series  $(E_i)_i$  of *constant functions* (i.e., functions whose output is insensitive to the input and so "depend on nothing") such that for all  $i$ ,  $X_i = E_i$ .

Our chain of explanation is hence complete iff

COMPLETENESS CONDITION (Second Version). 'For all  $i$ ,  $X_i = f_i \circ X_{i+1}$ ' implies that 'for all  $i$ ,  $X_i$  is constant'.

3045 As shown in appendix A, this second version of the **COMPLETENESS CONDI-**  
3046 **TION** is all we need to get the mathematical running and show that (CS<sub>1</sub>–CS<sub>2</sub>)  
3047 are jointly sufficient for completeness while (CN<sub>1</sub>) and (CN<sub>2</sub>) are both neces-  
3048 sary.

## 3049 **6 From Causal Explanation to Metaphysical Explanation** 3050 **and Other Determination Relations**

3051 We have isolated general formal conditions (CN<sub>1</sub>–CN<sub>2</sub>) and (CS<sub>1</sub>–CS<sub>2</sub>) on  
3052 the completeness of chains of causal explanations. They could be used to  
3053 generate other examples of complete and incomplete such chains and to  
3054 check whether current cosmology supports the idea that our universe might  
3055 actually be explained by a complete non-wellfounded chain of causes.

3056 Do the conditions (CN<sub>1</sub>–CN<sub>2</sub>) and (CS<sub>1</sub>–CS<sub>2</sub>) generalize to chains of meta-  
3057 physical explanations? The answer is that they do. Why? Because in our  
3058 reasoning, the fact that we were dealing with causal explanations, as opposed  
3059 to some other relations, only intervened in our argument to the effect that  
3060 causal explanations satisfy the explanation-determination conditions (and  
3061 also, though only verbally, in our choice of dubbing the “insensitivity to prior  
3062 items” in section 5.1, “historical irrelevance”). Yet if, as we have supposed,  
3063 metaphysical explanations follow laws, they should functionally determine  
3064 their explanandum as well: if the  $(i + 1)$ -th item fully grounds its antecedent,  
3065 and if it does that according to a law, it should determine it in the required  
3066 sense of a counterfactual-supporting functional dependence specified by (a–b)  
3067 (see section 5.3, footnote 17, and also Schaffer 2017, who develops a couple of  
3068 arguments to that effect). In other words, a metaphysical explanation must be  
3069 a determination condition, at least in the weak functional sense isolated above.  
3070 (ED<sub>1</sub>) should accordingly be satisfied. The same goes for (ED<sub>2</sub>) because the  
3071 obstacles to the entailment from determination to explanation are arguably  
3072 the same in the causal and in the metaphysical case, and they lose their grip  
3073 when we consider the completeness question for chains of explanations (the  
3074 problem of asymmetry does not arise in this context, and even if the laws  
3075 determine without explaining the full series because of overdetermination or  
3076 pre-emption, we would still have to say that a subset of the laws explains the  
3077 whole series and that the explanation is complete).

3078 More broadly, let us call an *R*-chain  $(u_i)_i$  a chain of *R*-related facts of the  
3079 form ‘ $X_i(@) = x_i$ ’, where *R* is a relation

- 3080 (I) whose logical form is  $(x, L)Ry$ , where  $x$  is an item or nothing ( $\emptyset$ ),  $L$  a  
 3081 law that can be kept implicit, and  $y$  an item or a series of items;  
 3082 (II) which is a determination relation in the sense that  $u_{i+1}Ru_i$  entails that  
 3083 there is a flow function such that  $X_i = f_i \circ X_{i+1}$ .

3084 Suppose that the  $R$ -chain is uniform in that the laws and the flow functions  
 3085 are always the same (for all  $i$ ,  $f_i = f$ ). Suppose, also, that we can define a  
 3086 metric on our items.<sup>16</sup>

3087 Say, finally, that the  $R$ -chain  $(u_i)_i$  is complete just in case

$$(\emptyset, L)R(u_i)_i,$$

3088 and say that it is quasi-complete if the laws  $L$  alone determine the whole  
 3089 series. We can easily show that the conditions (CS1–CS2) and (CN1–CN2) are  
 3090 respectively sufficient and necessary conditions for the quasi-completeness  
 3091 of the  $R$ -chain. We can easily show that (CN1–CN2) are also necessary for  
 3092 completeness. Conversely, (CS1–CS2) will be sufficient for completeness when  
 3093 completeness is entailed by quasi-completeness.

3094 As mentioned earlier, some philosophers believe that we should distinguish  
 3095 grounding from metaphysical explanation. Even if we have assumed that  
 3096 they were identical, these philosophers can still take  $R =$  grounding and  
 3097 get for grounding the exact same conclusions that we got for metaphysical  
 3098 explanations. Finally, this result might also apply to other determination  
 3099 relations, and in particular to  $R =$  supervenience (for supervenience, the  
 3100 questions of asymmetry preemption and overdetermination do not arise,<sup>17</sup> so  
 3101 the analog of (ED2) should trivially hold).

## 3102 7 Non-wellfounded Chains of Grounds

3103 Now that we have sufficient and necessary conditions for the completeness of  
 3104 non-wellfounded chains of grounds, we could try to use them to put forward  
 3105 “concrete” examples of complete and incomplete chains of grounds. As the  
 3106 conditions are formally similar to those that obtain in the case of causal  
 3107 explanations, we could also just try to adapt the examples we have already  
 3108 put forward. After all, if, as we have supposed, grounding is metaphysical

16 A metric, more precisely, that makes the space of items metric complete (in the mathematical sense of the term, see footnote 13).

17 This is precisely the reason why supervenience, which has long been used to capture something like metaphysical explanation, has largely been replaced by ground in this role.

3109 explanation, the only relevant difference between a case in which an item  
 3110  $x$  causally explains another  $y$  and a case in which  $x$  grounds  $y$  is that the  
 3111 laws regimenting the transition are natural, causal laws in the first case and  
 3112 metaphysical, grounding laws in the second. Maybe simply specifying that  
 3113 scribes, stick adjusters, and wheel turners are gods moved by metaphysical  
 3114 laws could do the trick?

### 7.5.1 *The Infinite Simulation and the Infinite Truth-Teller*

3116 More convincingly, we could rely on the idea that the world contains various  
 3117 layers of reality that are grounded on each other but might closely resemble  
 3118 each other. This is an idea we can find in some interpretations of Plato (where  
 3119 forms resemble concrete reality, which resemble representations thereof...),  
 3120 but that is also popular among digitalists who believe that we might live  
 3121 in a simulation that is being run in an “upper” world that is itself being  
 3122 simulated in an “upper” world, etc. (Chalmers 2022). Some even suppose  
 3123 that this could go on indefinitely (Steinhart 2014). Of course, when  $A$  is a  
 3124 simulation of  $B$ , there is normally a causal story to tell:  $A$  has, for example,  
 3125 been programmed by someone to simulate  $B$ . Yet  $B$  is realized and grounded on  
 3126  $A$ . Likewise, Plato famously provides (in the *Timaeus*) causal stories to explain  
 3127 the relationship between the Forms and the concrete objects we interact with.  
 3128 Yet these relations seem to involve grounds.

3129 Now, we can obtain a ground-theoretic version of the *Infinite Scribes* that  
 3130 way if we imagine that our layer of reality is likewise grounded on another  
 3131 layer, which is itself grounded on another layer..., and that this series is  
 3132 infinite. In the example below, I adopt Chalmers (2022)’s theory of simulation,  
 3133 according to which a simulation of  $X$  is a digital object having the same causal  
 3134 structure as  $X$  so that a simulation of a simulation of  $X$  is still a simulation of  
 3135  $X$ .

3136 *Infinite Simulation.* Layer #1 of reality contains just a digital object  
 3137  $d_1$ , which has the same causal structure  $t$  as that of a small tree and  
 3138 simulates the latter. This simulation is realized (and grounded) in  
 3139 layer #2 on another object  $d_2$ , which is part of a computer of that  
 3140 layer.  $d_2$  is realized and grounded in layer #3 on another object  $d_3$ ,  
 3141 which is part of a computer at that layer... Let  $x_i$  be the causal struc-  
 3142 ture of  $d_i$ . Here,  $u_i$  is the fact that the causal structure of the object  
 3143 at layer # $i$  is  $t$  (with the same notations as above,  $u_i = 'X_i(@) = t'$ ).

3144 The laws specify that each layer contains a simulated object realized  
3145 in the next layer.

3146 Here, the chain of ground is incomplete. Indeed, the fact that each object  
3147 is a simulation of the next does not explain why our series is a simulation  
3148 of a tree rather than one of (say) a bacteria. The reader can check that the  
3149 flow function is the identity function over causal structures and has every  
3150 causal structure as a fixed point. We have a simple example of an incomplete  
3151 non-wellfounded chain of grounds.

3152 The following *Infinite Truth-Teller*, which relies on truth-making rather  
3153 than simulation/realization, is similar to the *Infinite Simulation* and to the  
3154 *Infinite Scribes* case (the flow function is the identity over semantic values). It  
3155 is an incomplete infinite chain of grounds as well.

3156 *Infinite Truth-Teller.* Let  $(v_i)_i$  be a series of sentences, such that  $v_i =$   
3157 ‘ $v_{i+1}$  is true’. Let  $(x_i)_i$  be the series of the truth-values of the  $v_i$ s. Let  
3158  $u_i$  be the fact that the semantic value  $x_i$  of  $v_i$  is 1 ( $u_i = ‘X_i(@) = 1’$ ).  
3159  $u_1$  is grounded on  $u_2$ , which is grounded on  $u_3$ , etc.

3160 I find it harder to find an intuitively plausible ground-theoretic analog of our  
3161 *Infinite Stick Adjusters* example using iterated simulations or infinite chains  
3162 of sentences whose truths are grounded on each other.<sup>18</sup> Below, I argue that  
3163 we can come up with interesting cases of *complete* and *incomplete* chains of  
3164 grounds if we focus on the way facts about certain objects are grounded on  
3165 facts about smaller objects (think about the way chemical facts are grounded  
3166 in microphysical facts).

## 7.6.2 *Rep-Tiles and Fractals*

3168 Chemists often use tilings by dominoes as models of the composition of solids.  
3169 Facts about a solid modeled after a region of space can be considered as being  
3170 grounded on facts about the arrangement of molecules (modeled after the

---

18 It might be possible to construct a truth-making analog of the *Infinite Stick Adjusters* using supervaluationist semantics. It might as well be possible to construct a “simulationist” analog of the *Infinite Stick Adjusters* by specifying that the degree of reality decreases geometrically with iterated simulations and by considering facts such as  $u_i =$  ‘the degree of reality at level  $i$  is zero’. I have not, however, been able to find simple and intuitively convincing examples of such analogs.



3171 dominoes) tiling that region of space. More broadly, we can consider a world  
 3172 whose inhabitants are geometrical figures grounded on tilings thereof.

3173 Below, I consider two such worlds. The first one involves rep-tiles. The  
 3174 second involves fractals. I did not find these by accident. Indeed, (CN<sub>1</sub>–CN<sub>2</sub>)  
 3175 imply that if  $u_1$  is grounded on an infinite and complete chain of grounds,  
 3176 then  $u_1$  can be obtained, at the limit, by the recursive iteration of the flow  
 3177 function  $f$ . This provides a nice recipe for examples of complete chains of  
 3178 grounds.

3179 The first world is a rep-tile world. Rep-tiles are “self-replicating figures”:  
 3180 figures whose copies can be assembled to produce a bigger figure with the exact  
 3181 same shape—figures that can, equivalently, be dissected into smaller copies of  
 3182 the same shape (see Gardner 2001, 46–58, and figure 1 for an illustration).<sup>19</sup>  
 3183 The second involves a fractal, i.e., a geometrical object whose structure is  
 3184 identical at every scale (we sometimes say that such an object is “self-similar”).

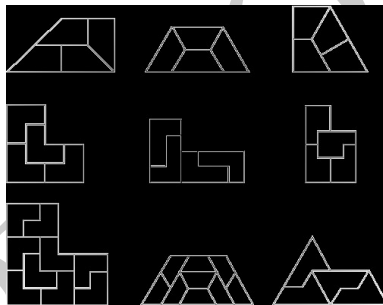


Figure 1: Examples of rep-tiles: the first two lines display rep-4 tiles, and the last line displays two rep-9 tiles and one rep-4 tile.

3185 A REP-TILES WORLD. Let us start with rep-tiles, then. We can divide rep-tiles  
 3186 according to the number of copies of themselves needed to make a bigger  
 3187 version of themselves. Here, we will focus on rep-4 tiles, that is, on figures  
 3188 that can compose bigger versions of themselves composed of *four* copies of  
 3189 themselves. Every triangle and every parallelogram is a rep-4 tile (they are  
 3190 not the only rep-4 tiles—see figure 1—but we will focus on these rep-4 tiles

<sup>19</sup> A more complex, and probably more realistic, example involves a generalization of rep-tiles called “self-tiling tile sets” or “setisets” for short (Sallows 2014).

3191 to make things simpler). For every triangle and every parallelogram  $O$ , there  
 3192 is a unique rep-4 tile  $f_r(O)$  made of  $O$ , three other copies of  $O$ , and such that  
 3193  $O$  is on the bottom left corner of this rep-4 tile.

3194 Conversely, for every triangle and every parallelogram  $O$ , there is a unique  
 3195 tiling (or “dissection”) of  $O$  in four identical parts of the same shape as  $O$ , but  
 3196 with sides that are half the size of  $O$ 's side. We can represent a tiling of  $O$  as a  
 3197 set of tiles (understood as compact regions, i.e., a bounded set of points that  
 3198 is topologically closed) whose union is  $O$  and whose intersection is reduced  
 3199 to the border of neighboring tiles.<sup>20</sup> We can label these tiles of  $O$  “ $O_a$ ,” “ $O_b$ ,”  
 3200 “ $O_c$ ,” and “ $O_d$ ,” using the left-to-right and up-to-down order.

3201 Now, each of these tiles likewise admits a unique tiling in four similar parts.  
 3202  $O_a$  is tiled by  $O_{aa}$ ,  $O_{ab}$ ,  $O_{ac}$ ,  $O_{ad}$ ;  $O_b$  is tiled by  $O_{ba}$ ,  $O_{bb}$ ,  $O_{bc}$ ,  $O_{bd}$ , etc. We can  
 3203 call “ $i$ -iterated rep-4 tiling” a tiling obtained by  $i$  iterations of this operation  
 3204 (see figure 2).

3205 The inverse of  $f_r$  is the function  $f_d$ , which is such that  $f_d(O) = O_a$ .

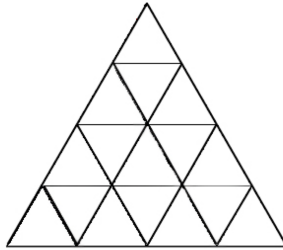


Figure 2: A triangle to which the dissection operation has been applied twice and that is accordingly tiled in 16 similar triangles.

3206 Now, imagine a world that can only contain triangular or rectangular rep-  
 3207 4 tiles and in which each rep-4 tile is, at the next level, composed of its  
 3208 dissection in 4 tiles, whose tiles are in turn composed of their own dissections,  
 3209 etc. Consider the following series of rep-4 tiles indexed by levels. At level 1,  
 3210 the figure is an equilateral triangle  $x_1 = abc$ . At level 2, it is the smaller figure  
 3211  $x_2$  at the left bottom corner of  $x_1$ , such that  $x_1$  is composed of three copies

20 We stipulate that figures are all compact and hence topologically closed, so the intersection of two bordering figures is non-empty, and we do not get a genuine partition of the original figure  $O$ . We could slightly modify the case to get a genuine partition, but that would make things uselessly more complex.

3212 of  $x_2$  ( $x_2 = f_d(x_1)$ ). At level 3, it is the smaller figure  $x_3$  at the left bottom  
 3213 corner of  $x_2$ , such that  $x_2$  is composed of three copies of  $x_3$  ( $x_3 = f_d(x_2)$ ), etc.  
 3214 If we assume that facts about parts are explanatorily prior to facts about the  
 3215 whole they compose, the fact that the figure at level 1 is  $x_1$  is grounded on  
 3216 the fact that level 2 is  $x_2 = f_d(x_1)$ .<sup>21</sup> This is grounded on the fact that at level  
 3217 2, the figure at the bottom left corner is the yet smaller equilateral triangle  
 3218  $x_3 = f_d(x_2)$ ... The flow function here is  $f_r$ , the inverse function of  $f_d$ .

3219 *Infinite Rep-4 Tiles World.* Consider a world that contains a rep-4  
 3220 tile at level 1 and, at each other level, a basic rep-4 tile on the bottom  
 3221 left corner of which the rep-4 tile at the preceding level is composed.  
 3222 At level #1, the figure is an equilateral triangle  $x_1 = abc$ , which  
 3223 (fact) is grounded in the fact that at level #2, the figure is its tile  $x_2$   
 3224 (where  $x_2 = f_d(x_1)$  and  $x_1 = f_r(x_2)$ ), which (fact) is grounded on  
 3225 the fact that at level #3, the figure is  $x_2$ 's tile  $x_3$  (with  $x_3 = f_d(x_2)$   
 3226 and  $x_2 = f_r(x_3)$ ), etc. We have an infinite chain of grounds. Here,  $u_i$   
 3227 is the fact that the figure at level  $i$  is  $x_i$ ;  $u_i = 'X_i(@) = x_i'$ , the flow  
 3228 function is  $f_r$ , and  $X_i = f_r \circ X_{i+1}$ . The metaphysical laws specify that  
 3229 the world contains only rep-4 tiles and that each rep-4 tile at level  
 3230 # $i$  is composed of its tiling at level  $\#(i + 1)$ .

3231 Now, in this case, the fact that each item of this series of grounds is grounded  
 3232 on its successor according to the laws leaves it open whether they are all  
 3233 triangles or (say) squares (compare with the *Infinite Scribes* series). It also  
 3234 leaves completely open the size of the first item or its very existence. So, the  
 3235 series is not complete. In fact, it can be checked that the flow function  $f_r$  has  
 3236 no fixed point at all (it maps a figure to one of its proper parts), so the case  
 3237 does not satisfy (CN1).

3238 A FRACTAL WORLD. We can now move on to the fractal case. A dilation of  
 3239 factor  $x$  and center  $O$  is a function that regularly dilates the space of factor  
 3240  $x$  around  $O$ . Such a dilation will, for example, transform a circle of center  $O$   
 3241 and radius 1 meter into a circle of center  $O$  and radius  $x$  meters (if  $x < 1$ , the  
 3242 dilation will actually shrink the space).

---

21 Priority monists such as Schaffer (2010) believe that, on the contrary, facts about parts are grounded on facts concerning the wholes they compose. The reader can check that the example can be modified to suit priority monism: consider a world that contains iterated tilings (rather than iterated dissections) and replace  $f_d$  with  $f_r$ .

3243 Let  $abc$  be a filled equilateral triangle with 1 meter sides, and let  $f_{sa}$  be the  
 3244 dilation of center  $a$  and factor  $1/2$ ,  $f_{sb}$  be the dilation of center  $b$  and factor  
 3245  $1/2$ , and  $f_{sc}$  be the dilation of center  $c$  and factor  $1/2$ . Consider the function  
 3246  $f_s = f_{sa} \cup f_{sb} \cup f_{sc}$ . It is, so to speak, a “shrinking and duplication” function that  
 3247 associates to a figure  $O$  (understood as the shape of a compact set of points)  
 3248 three shrunk copies of it disposed at the extremities of the equilateral triangle.  
 3249 Now consider the figure  $s$  obtained at the limit by applying  $f_s$  iteratively to  
 3250 the filled equilateral triangle  $abc$ . This figure is called the Sierpiński gasket  
 3251 (or the Sierpiński sieve or the Sierpiński triangle) of corners  $a$ ,  $b$ , and  $c$ .<sup>22</sup>

3252 This way of generating the Sierpiński gasket might suggest a causal process  
 3253 (imagine someone repetitively shrinking triangles and assembling them...).  
 3254 Pace constructivists, however, we do not need to construe this way of gener-  
 3255 ating the Sierpiński gasket (or indeed others) as really requiring some kind  
 3256 of diachronic construction. Moreover, even if constructivists were right to  
 3257 claim that the only good definition of  $s$  involves a causal or quasi-causal con-  
 3258 struction process, this causal construction story would be compatible with  
 3259 the following grounding claims concerning the output of this process. Indeed,  
 3260 by construction, the first figure  $x_1 = s$  is composed of three shrunk copies  
 3261 (scale  $1/2$ ) of a second figure  $x_2$  (take the one on the left bottom corner) such  
 3262 that  $x_1 = f_s(x_2)$ ,  $x_2$  is likewise composed of three shrunk copies (scale  $1/2$   
 3263 again) of a third figure  $x_3$  such that  $x_2 = f_s(x_3)$ , etc. If we assume, again, that  
 3264 facts about parts are explanatorily prior to facts concerning the whole they  
 3265 form, then the fact that the figure at level  $i$  in the series is  $x_i$  is grounded on  
 3266 the fact that the figure at level  $i + 1$  is  $x_{i+1}$ , where  $x_i = f_s(x_{i+1})$ .

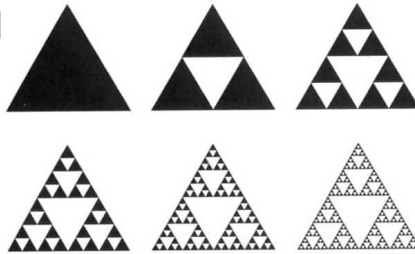


Figure 3: Sierpiński gasket obtained by iteration of  $f_s$  on a filled triangle.

<sup>22</sup> This way of generating the Sierpinski sieve is called the “iterated functions system”; see, e.g., Falconer (2003, chap. IX).

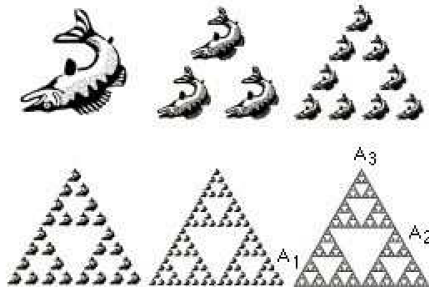


Figure 4: Sierpiński sieve obtained by iteration of a  $f_s$  on a fish... (from Barnsley, Hutchinson and Stenflo 2003).

3267 *Sierpiński Gasket World.* Consider a world that contains an infinity  
 3268 of levels. At level 1, there is a figure  $x_1$ , which is composed of three  
 3269 shrunk copies (scale 1/2) of the figure  $x_2$  at level 2 ( $x_1 = f_s(x_2)$ ).  
 3270 The figure at level 2 is itself composed of three shrunk copies (scale  
 3271 1/2) of the figure at level 3 ( $x_2 = f_s(x_3)$ )... The figure at level #1,  $x_1$ ,  
 3272 is the Sierpiński gasket  $s$ , which (fact) is grounded on the fact that  
 3273 the figure at level #2,  $x_2$ , is  $s$  as well, which is grounded on the fact  
 3274 that the figure at level #3,  $x_3$ , is  $s$  as well, etc.

3275 Here,  $u_i$  is the fact that figure  $x_i$  at level # $i$  is  $s$ :  $u_i = 'X_i(@) = s'$ .  
 3276 The flow function is  $f_s$ , and  $X_i = f_s \circ X_{i+1}$ . The metaphysical laws  
 3277 state that there exists at least a figure (a compact set of points) and  
 3278 regiment the way (reflected by the flow function  $f_s$ ) each figure is  
 3279 composed of three shrunk copies of the figure at the next level.

3280 Here, the laws alone determine both the shape of the figures in our series  
 3281 ( $x_1 = x_2 = x_3 = \dots = x_n = \dots$  is the Sierpiński gasket  $s$ ) and their existence.  
 3282 It thus determines the whole series  $u_i$ .

3283 Indeed, it can be shown that  $f_s$  is contractive,<sup>23</sup> and we can delimit our  
 3284 world so that it is bounded (we can specify that  $f_s$  is only defined on a bounded

23 The canonical Euclidian metric of the plane is not defined for figures (compact sets of points) but only for points, so in order to rigorously show that  $f_s$  is contractive, we need to introduce a distance on compact sets. This is typically done using Hausdorff distance (Falconer 2003).

3285 portion of space, including the triangle  $abc$ ). This means that the flow function  
 3286  $f_s$  satisfies (CS1) (contractive character) and (CS2) (boundedness).

3287 The fact that our series is complete is also connected to a very peculiar  
 3288 property of  $f_s$ : whatever figure  $x$  we start with, the iteration of  $f_s$  on  $x$  will  
 3289 always yield the same figure.  $x$  can be a triangle (figure 3), a filled square, or  
 3290 even a fish (figure 4); the iteration of  $f_s$  on  $x$  will always yield the Sierpiński  
 3291 gasket  $s$  at the limit. The reader can check that this peculiar property is, in  
 3292 fact, equivalent to the satisfaction of (CN1) and (CN2).

3293 Using (CN1), (CN2), and (CS1–CS2), we can construct other examples  
 3294 of complete and incomplete, non-wellfounded explanations. These might  
 3295 help us understand better what the difference between them amounts to. In  
 3296 appendix B, I put forward simpler (if less graphic), unidimensional versions  
 3297 of the above rep-tiles and fractal worlds: the *Zeno World* and the *Cantor Set*  
 3298 *World*.

### 7.3 What About Circular Chains of Ground?

3300 Our examples of complete non-wellfounded chains of grounds involve infinite  
 3301 chains. Could we modify them, as we have modified the *Infinite Stick Adjusters*  
 3302 example, to put forward an example of a circular chain? Formally, this is not  
 3303 particularly problematic. The problem is rather to make metaphysical sense of  
 3304 the formal model—we have no simple ground-theoretic analog of time  
 3305 travel to make sense of circular metaphysical explanations.

3306 Nolan (2018, 93) does try to make sense of something like a circular version  
 3307 of our *Sierpiński Gasket World* by describing a world in which “what appears  
 3308 to be our entire universe is just a sub-atomic particle in a larger universe,  
 3309 which is but a sub-atomic particle in a yet larger ‘universe,’ and so on,” but  
 3310 where if you “go up through enough stages [...] you will arrive back at one of  
 3311 our sub-atomic particles.” Even though I find the scenario conceivable myself,  
 3312 I must say that most people I have met—and a couple of referees for this  
 3313 journal—don’t.

3314 There are, in any case, simpler and less controversial (if less graphic) ways  
 3315 to construct complete circular chains of grounds. Consider:

3316 *No-Yes-Yes Sentences.*

- 3317 (1) “(2) is not true.”  
 3318 (2) “(1) is true, and (2) is true.”

3319 The semantic value of (1) is grounded on that of (2), which is  
 3320 grounded on that of (1) and (2). So, we have a circular (non-uniform)  
 3321 chain of grounds. Here,  $u_1$  is the fact that the semantic value of sen-  
 3322 tence (1) is true, and  $u_2$  is the fact that the semantic value of sentence  
 3323 (2) is false (see below).

3324 Classical logic and the naïve T-schema<sup>24</sup> show that (2) must be false and that  
 3325 (1) must be true. Indeed, if (2) is true, by one conditional T-out of the naïve  
 3326 T-schema, (1) is true, which means by T-out again that (2) is not true. This  
 3327 implies that (2) must be untrue and, by the other conditional T-in of the naïve  
 3328 T-schema, that (1) must be true. So the fact that (and the way) the semantic  
 3329 values of (1) and (2) are grounded on each other determines their semantic  
 3330 values.<sup>25</sup> We have an example of a *complete but circular chain of grounds*.

3331 Note that we can put that reasoning in functional terms to match the other  
 3332 cases of grounding chains presented in this article. The semantic value [1] of  
 3333 (1) is such that  $[1] = 1 - [2]$ , and  $[2] = \min([1], [2])$ , so  $[2] = \min(1 - [2], [2])$ .  
 3334 The function that associates to a semantic value  $x$ , the semantic value  $\min(1 -$   
 3335  $x, x)$ , has only one fixed point, however, which is 0. This implies that (2) is  
 3336 false and (1) true. The fact that all orbits of the function  $\min(1 - x, x)$  (all  
 3337 series of that result from the iteration of that function) converge to 0 moreover  
 3338 implies that the second version of the completeness condition is satisfied.<sup>26</sup>

---

24 The naïve T-schema says that “ $p$ ” is true entails  $p$  (T-out) and that  $p$  entails that “ $p$ ” is true (T-in), where “ $p$ ” is replaced by an arbitrary sentence. This naïve T-schema is notorious for giving rise to semantic paradoxes when conjoined with classical logic and the existence of certain sentences, such as the liar-sentence “This sentence is false.” One way to solve such paradoxes, once popular, consists in brutally restricting the naïve T-schema to prevent self-referential truth-talk. Since the work of Kripke (1975), it is widely held that such an approach is too costly.

25 In other words, we are in a case in which condition (B) follows from (A).

26 This example is a non-paradoxical and non-hypodoxical variant of the truth-teller hypodox and the no-no paradox (cf. Billon 2019). The reader can check that this example can also be modified very simply to yield an *infinite* (and partly circular) complete chain of grounds:

- (1) “(2) is not true.”
- (2) “(1) is true, and (3) is true.”
- (3) “(4) is not true.”
- (4) “(3) is true, and (5) is true.”
- (.) ...

## 3338 **8 Supercomplete Explanations and the Extra-Property** 3340 **Objection Again**

3341 In order to deny the significance of complete non-wellfounded chains of  
3342 grounds, one might try to downplay the contrast between my examples of  
3343 complete and incomplete chains of explanation cases by claiming that their  
3344 comparison is not totally fair.

3345 Consider, for instance, the contrast between my *Infinite Rep-4 Tiles World*  
3346 case and my *Sierpiński Gasket World* case. For one thing, we could add “degrees  
3347 of freedom” to the *Sierpiński Gasket World* case so that the chain of grounds  
3348 becomes incomplete. Suppose, for example, that  $s$  is red but that our world  
3349 allows for the possibility of blue and green figures. The color of  $s$ , unlike its  
3350 shape, would not be determined by the infinite chain of grounds. The fact  
3351 that  $s_1$  was obtained by the iteration of  $f_s$  would indeed leave its color totally  
3352 open. The latter would not be determined, and it would not be explained.  
3353 Accordingly, the chain of ground would be incomplete.

3354 Conversely, we could modify the *Infinite Rep-4 Tiles World* case so as to  
3355 determine certain features that were not determined by our description of the  
3356 case. For example, we might specify that our world contains only equilateral  
3357 triangles and, accordingly, that  $f_a$  only ranges over such triangles. The fact  
3358 that our initial figure is an equilateral triangle (but, it should be emphasized,  
3359 not the size of this triangle) would thus be determined and explained by our  
3360 infinite chain of grounds. Similarly, we could specify that there exists at least  
3361 one figure in the world, as we did in the fractal case: the fact that there exists  
3362 a figure (though not its shape) would then be determined and explained by  
3363 our series.

3364 The upshot is that in both examples, *the description of the case presupposes*  
3365 *what can vary and needs to be grounded and what is fixed by the (more or less im-*  
3366 *PLICIT) laws regimenting our example* (where these laws are understood broadly  
3367 enough to include “structural features” of our cases, such as a specification  
3368 of the possible entities it involves). But these presuppositions can be called  
3369 into question, and what they presuppose (certain laws) might itself call for an  
3370 explanation.

3371 This is a fair point. In answer, we might concede that the morals of the  
3372 fractal and rep-tiles examples are somehow modest. Indeed, it is only that:

- 3373 • *some features* (here, for example, the shape)



- 3374 • can be explained by *certain infinite or circular chains of grounds but not*
- 3375 *by others,*
- 3376 • and that these features would not be explained by the corresponding
- 3377 finite, well-founded chains of ground (unless they start with an element
- 3378 that is self-grounded or, maybe, autonomous).

3379 In other words, my conclusion would only be that *infinity or circularity (non-*

3380 *wellfoundedness) can do some explanatory work.* The fact that a figure  $s^*$

3381 results from 12 iterations of  $f_s$  does not determine the shape of this figure or

3382 of its successors (it only determines that  $s^*$  will loosely resemble a Sierpiński

3383 gasket). The fact that it results from an infinity of iterations does determine

3384 its shape. Far from being an obstacle to good explanations, as suggested by

3385 the quotations of Fine and Schaffer, infinity and circularity can do genuine

3386 explanatory work, but they will only do so in cases where the completeness

3387 condition is satisfied.<sup>27</sup>

3388 In any case, it should be emphasized that granting, as I have just done, that

3389 the right conclusion is just that non-wellfoundedness can do some explanato-

3390 ry work and that non-wellfounded explanations might only yield complete

3391 explanations in cases where the laws themselves are in need of explanation is

---

27 Morganti (2015) distinguishes between the transmission model and the emergence model of being and argues that the prejudice against infinite chains of grounds stems from a neglect of the emergence model:

The “transmission model” of being, whereby the being of an entity at a given level of reality  $L_n$  is fully obtained, in a yes/no, all-or-nothing fashion, from the entity or entities at the immediately prior level  $L_{n-1}$ . [...]

According to the emergence model of being, then, the metaphysical structure of priority and dependence gives rise to a dynamics analogous to that underlying the convergent [Zeno/geometric] series

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{1}{2^n}$$

i.e.,  $1/2 + 1/4 + 1/8...$

which converges towards 1 as  $n$  approaches infinity (and never becomes higher than 1). (Morganti 2015, 560–562)

However, if I understand him correctly, Morganti fails to draw the relevant distinction between cases where infinity does and where infinity does not do any explanatory work. Indeed, some examples of infinite chains of grounds seem to fit perfectly the emergence model but are incomplete nonetheless: this is the case, notably, of the *Infinite Rep-4 Tiles World* and of the *Zeno World*.

3392 not as concessive as it might seem. For one thing, many people believe that  
 3393 (what we consider as) the causal or even metaphysical laws of the world call  
 3394 for some explanations: fundamental physics tries to explain and unify the  
 3395 acknowledged laws, and some metaphysicians ask for grounds of grounds  
 3396 (Litland 2017). For another, once it is granted that infinity or circularity can do  
 3397 some explanatory work, one could start wondering whether the features that  
 3398 are not determined and explained by the chain of explanations itself and that  
 3399 we “hold fixed” by putting them in the laws  $L$  implicit in the description of  
 3400 the case (e.g., that shapes have no colors in the fractal case) could themselves  
 3401 be explained completely by another non-wellfounded chain of explanations.  
 3402 Who knows, the law  $L$  might be explained by some further law  $\mathcal{L}_1$ , which  
 3403 might be explained by  $\mathcal{L}_2$ , etc. And this chain of explanations might be complete.  
 3404 For sure, this chain of explanations will presuppose what we might call  
 3405 meta-laws  $ML$ , but they might likewise be explained by a complete, infinite  
 3406 chain of explanations... And once it is understood that infinite chains of explanations  
 3407 can be complete and can, more broadly, be explanatorily productive,  
 3408 infinite regresses should not scare us anymore—not even if we are looking  
 3409 for a complete explanation (where nothing but the laws call for explanation)  
 3410 or an ultimate explanation (where not even the laws call for explanation).<sup>28</sup>

## 3419 **9 Equilibrium Explanations and Essentialist Explanations**

3412 I have argued that non-wellfounded chains of explanations are somehow on a  
 3413 par with non-wellfounded chains of explanations with regard to completeness:  
 3414 the first can be complete if the flow function meets certain conditions (such  
 3415 as being bounded and contractive), and the second can be complete if they  
 3416 start with a self-explained item (in the sense of an item  $x$  such that  $x$  or a  
 3417 proper part of  $x$  fully explains  $x$ ) or an autonomous item (in the sense that  
 3418 it does not call for an explanation). One might even think that they have a  
 3419 decisive advantage. Indeed, self-grounded or autonomous items, maybe in part  
 3420 because they have been often invoked by Theists, are sometimes considered

---

28 Let us call “weirdly” explained a fact that is explained in a case where  $(u_i)_i$  is non-wellfounded but that would not be explained if  $(u_i)_i$  were well-founded. As we have just seen, the fact that the first figure of the series  $s$  is a Sierpiński gasket inscribed in  $abc$  is weirdly explained in the fractal case, not the fact that there exists a figure. An interesting question is whether some facts cannot, because of their very nature, be weirdly explained by any kind of chain of explanations. If there were such facts, they could only be explained by being put explicitly in the laws. Many philosophers exposed to the arguments in this article have suggested that the fact that there exists something could not be weirdly explained.

3421 spooky or supernatural, but complete, non-wellfounded explanations seem to  
3422 be just as kosher as the bounded and contractive flow functions underlying  
3423 them. In this section, I would like to show that complete, non-wellfounded  
3424 explanations are indeed unproblematic by answering an important objection  
3425 against that claim and showing that we already appeal to them ordinarily.

3426 We have seen in section 5.1 that all complete, non-wellfounded explanations  
3427  $(u_i)_i$  will display a form of “historical irrelevance” or “insensitivity to prior  
3428 items”:  $u_1$  will not depend on the successors that explain it. (ED1) moreover  
3429 entails that if our non-wellfounded chain of explanation is complete, the  
3430 series  $(u_i)_i$  is determined by the series of laws  $(L_i)_i$ . Assuming, as we have,  
3431 that determination is functional, this, in turn, entails that if our chain of  
3432 explanation is uniform (and for all  $i$ ,  $L_i = L_1$ ), then all  $x_i$  will all be equal  
3433 to  $x_1$ , and all  $u_i$  will be of the form ‘ $x_i = x_1$ ’. We can check that this is  
3434 what happened in all our examples of complete, non-wellfounded chains of  
3435 explanations (except for the *No-Yes-Yes Sentences*, which are not uniform).

3436 Now, it might be wondered if such explanations, in which everything is  
3437 determined by the laws alone rather than by prior items, are acceptable. I  
3438 believe they are totally OK. One reason is that we do, in fact, commonly use  
3439 such explanations. Below, I consider two rather common types of explanations  
3440 that display “insensitivity to prior items” and in which the explanandum is  
3441 determined by the laws alone: strict equilibrium explanations and essentialist  
3442 explanations.

3443 Consider, in the case of causal explanations, the so-called equilibrium ex-  
3444 planations. The statistician Ronald Fisher explained why the sex ratio of males  
3445 and females is approximately one by the fact that any deviation from this  
3446 ratio would be progressively canceled by natural selection. This is a class-  
3447 ical equilibrium explanation, and it displays, like our complete infinite and  
3448 circular explanations, a form of historical irrelevance: to the extent that this  
3449 explanation is correct, the sex ratio should always have been approximately  
3450 one, and one can deduce that it is approximately one today without inquiring  
3451 about its former values. Consider, to take another example, a lead ball in a  
3452 closed bowl submitted to the law of gravity. One can explain why, after some  
3453 time, the ball rests at the bottom of the bowl by the fact that it is the only  
3454 equilibrium of the system.

3455 More formally, an equilibrium explanation is an explanation of the state  
3456 of a dynamical system, i.e., of a system whose state is described by a point  
3457  $Y$  in a geometrical space that depends functionally on a variable  $X$ , usually  
3458 temporal:  $Y = f(X)$ . An equilibrium explanation explains the present state

of the system by the fact that this state is an equilibrium of the system and that the present state is the result of the iteration of  $f$  on a given initial state  $x$ . The series  $(f^i(x))_i$  is called the orbit of  $x$ . The equilibria of a dynamical system are determined by the explanatory laws. They are fixed points of  $f$ .

In many cases, equilibrium explanations are partial or elliptical. Sometimes, for example, we just state that the system is in state  $e$  because it is an equilibrium, but there are multiple equilibria of the system in which the system could end up being as well; or there is only one equilibrium  $e$ , but not all orbits  $(f^i(x))$  converge toward  $e$ ; or else all orbits converge towards  $e$  but some converge so slowly that the system could fail to be even close to the equilibrium, even after a huge amount of time. We can call “strict” an equilibrium explanation in which the system has only one equilibrium,  $e$ , and all orbits  $(f^i(x))$  converge toward  $e$ , and “supers-strict,” one in which  $f$  is bounded and contractive. A super-strict equilibrium explanation is, intuitively, a strict equilibrium explanation whose orbits converge very quickly (geometrically). It seems that a strict equilibrium explanation in which the prior states of the system are infinitely many is a full explanation of why the system is in the equilibrium state  $e$ . Moreover, such a strict equilibrium explanation is an explanation in which the prior states of the system are irrelevant: it is an explanation by the laws alone. In fact, the reader can check that the function  $f$  regimenting the dynamical system here is exactly what we have called the flow function before and that, formally speaking, all non-wellfounded, complete chains of explanations can be understood as such strict equilibrium explanations with an infinite number of prior states.<sup>29</sup> Even though classical equilibrium explanations are causal rather than metaphysical, we might thus consider complete infinite chains of grounds as a ground-theoretic version of equilibrium explanations.

Take essentialist explanations, now, such as the classical theist explanation that explains the existence of God by the fact that existence is part of His essence, or, lower on Earth, this essentialist explanation put forward by Kappes (2022, 444): the fact that either the sun is shining or it is not shining

---

<sup>29</sup> There is a close connection between equilibrium explanations and optimality explanations, i.e., explanations, often found in biology or in certain interpretations of physics (cf. the Maupertuis-Leibniz interpretation of classical mechanics and (geometrical) optics), that explain the state of a system by the fact that it is in some sense optimal. This comes from the fact, exploited by optimization algorithms, that the optima of a (regular enough) function are the fixed point of a certain flow function and, in the good cases, the unique fixed point of a certain flow function towards which all orbits converge.

3490 is explained by the essence of (classical) disjunction and negation. (Note that  
3491 we do not need to commit to the precise essence of classical disjunction and  
3492 negation to make the claim that they explain such a fact.)<sup>30</sup> Essentialist expla-  
3493 nations are, or at least can be, perfectly kosher. It also seems that they can be  
3494 understood, at least sometimes, as explanations by laws alone: in the classical  
3495 logic example, we might say that the explanation relies on some laws of logic  
3496 that are part of what define disjunction and negation, i.e., are essential to  
3497 them.

3498 We can conclude that there is at least one rather ordinary and unproblematic  
3499 explanation by laws alone and that there might even be two: equilibrium  
3500 explanations and essentialist explanations.<sup>31</sup>

### 3501 **10 How Simple Are Non-wellfounded, Complete** 3502 **Explanations?**

3503 In the introduction, I mentioned the fact that foes of non-wellfounded chains  
3504 of grounds sometimes argue that they are explanatorily defective because  
3505 they are incomplete. I have argued that they are wrong to suppose that non-  
3506 wellfounded explanations need to be incomplete.

3507 There is, however, another, a weaker version of the “explanatorily defec-  
3508 tive objection” against infinite chains of grounds. Instead of the principle  
3509 of sufficient reason or one of its cognates, the latter invokes theory-choice  
3510 considerations such as unity or simplicity and concludes that even though  
3511 they are strictly speaking possible, infinite chains of grounds simply do not  
3512 occur in the actual world. Thus, says Cameron (2008):

3513 It would be better to be able to give a common metaphysical ex-  
3514 planation for every dependent entity [every item in the chain  
3515 that is grounded on another one]. We can do that only if every  
3516 dependent entity has its ultimate onto-logical basis in some col-  
3517 lection of independent entities; so this provides reason to believe

---

30 Kappes (2022) calls explanations by laws alone “empty-base explanations” and provides many other interesting examples of such explanations.

31 An interesting question, which I will not have the time to address here, is whether some essentialist explanations can be analyzed as (ground-theoretic analogs of) equilibrium explanations. I raise this question because the connection between equilibrium explanations and optimality explanations noted in footnote 29 suggests a fascinating (if speculative) possibility, namely, that teleological essentialist explanations found in certain broadly Aristotelian or Leibnizian metaphysics might be underwritten by complete, non-wellfounded chains of explanations.

the intuition against infinite descent in metaphysical explanation.  
(Cameron 2008, 12)

Interestingly, the examples we have used to answer the stronger PSR-based objection against non-wellfounded chains of grounds allow us to dismiss this objection against infinite chains of grounds. For in all our examples of complete explanations, we have a simple explanation “for all dependent entities”: it involves a simple structural feature of the chain of grounds, namely, the fact that its flow function  $f$  satisfies the second version of the completeness condition (see section 5.4), and in all but the *Infinite Wheel Turners* case, the even simpler fact that  $f$  is bounded and contractive.

It might not be trivial to compare two explanations for their theoretical virtues (a point rightly emphasized by [Bliss and Priest 2018](#) in response to Cameron), but I think Cameron’s point rests on the following comparison. Consider an ascending chain of grounds that starts with a foundational element  $v_1$ , which explains  $v_2$ , which explains  $v_3$ ... Such a well-founded chain provides a simple explanation because, even if we have an infinity of items, the infinite chain can, so to speak, be factorized:  $v_1$  explains all the following items. By contrast, suggests Cameron, a descending infinite chain such as the one we have considered, where  $u_1$  is grounded on  $u_2$ , which is grounded on  $u_3$ , etc., cannot be factorized because there is no *ur*-item on which all the others are grounded. So, such a descending infinite explanation, concludes Cameron, must necessarily be complex. What is wrong with Cameron’s argument is that he supposes that the only way to factorize or simplify an infinite (descending or ascending) chain of explanations involves a foundational item. This is wrong: in all the complete infinite cases we have considered, the descending infinite chains can be, so to speak, factorized if we invoke the fact that the laws (and, in the uniform cases, the law) suffice to explain all the items.<sup>32</sup>

---

32 In his latest book, Cameron (2022, chap. 3) grants that there *are* non-wellfounded chains of ontological dependence or grounds, but he argues that non-wellfounded chains of ontological dependence cannot be explanatory and that non-wellfounded chains of grounds are not normally explanatory. He relies, to that effect, on the quite unorthodox claim that grounding is not tied to metaphysical explanation. According to him, metaphysical explanation is indeed tied to understanding in a way that grounding is not. I do not have the room to discuss his view and his arguments here in any detail. I just want to mention that all my examples of infinite chains of grounds seem perfectly explanatory to me and that they do seem to provide a better understanding of the grounded items.

## 4.1 Conclusion

Most philosophers assume that non-wellfounded explanations are either impossible, non-existent, or, at least, incomplete or complex. Friends of non-wellfounded explanations usually accept that they cannot be complete but argue that this should not be counted against them. I have argued that non-wellfounded chains of explanations, be they causal or metaphysical, can be complete and simple, and, indeed, perfectly satisfying and *not* defective. The examples I have provided in support of that claim also show, I hope, that such explanations are also perfectly possible. Those who want a complete explanation of the world need not restrict their attention to foundationalist explanations starting with a self-explanatory or autonomous item. They can—in fact, they should—consider non-wellfounded explanations very seriously.

## Appendices

### Appendix A: From the Second Completeness Condition to (CS1–CS2) and (CN1–CN2)

Let us use the symbol “Im” for the image of a function. Let us also call:

$$\Pi_i = \text{Im } f_i \cap \text{Im}(f_i \circ f_{i+1}) \cap \text{Im}(f_i \circ f_{i+1} \circ f_{i+2}) \cap \dots \cap (f_i \circ f_{i+1} \circ f_{i+2} \circ \dots \circ f_{i+j}) \cap \dots$$

Our completeness condition will be satisfied iff for all  $i$ ,  $\Pi_i$  is reduced to a singleton whose member is the only value  $X_i$  can take.

It can be checked that if the flow is uniform ( $L_i = L$  and  $f_i = f$  do not depend on  $i$ ),

$$\Pi_i = \text{Im } f \cap \text{Im } f^2 \cap \text{Im } f^3 \cap \dots \cap \text{Im } f^j \dots = \Pi$$

does not depend on  $i$ , and the completeness condition is simply that  $\Pi$  is a singleton.

COMPLETENESS CONDITION (Uniform Case, Third Version). There is  $e$  such that

$$\Pi = \text{Im } f \cap \text{Im } f^2 \cap \text{Im } f^3 \cap \dots \cap \text{Im } f^j \dots = \{e\}.$$

As for all  $i$ ,  $\text{Im } f^{1+i} \subset \text{Im } f$ , this condition can be simplified:

COMPLETENESS CONDITION (Uniform Case, Fourth Version). There is  $e$  such that  $\text{Im } f^i$  converges towards  $\{e\}$ .

We can now show that if the completeness condition is satisfied, (CN1) will be satisfied too. If  $x \in \Pi$  and the completeness condition (take the uniform case, first version) is satisfied, there is  $y$  such that  $x = f(y)$ . But as  $(x =)f(y) \in \Pi$  entails  $y \in \Pi$  too, this means that if  $\Pi$  is a singleton and  $x \in \Pi$ , then  $x$  is a fixed point of  $f$ :  $x = f(x)$ . Conversely, if  $e$  is a fixed point of  $f$ , by the completeness condition (take the first version again), it belongs to  $\Pi$ . So if  $\Pi$  is a singleton,  $f$  has a unique fixed point  $e$ , and  $\Pi = \{e\}$ .

Similarly, it can be checked that if (CN2) failed,  $\text{Im } f^i$  could not converge toward  $\{e\}$ , and so the completeness condition (take the uniform case, second version) would not be satisfied.

Conversely, if  $f$  is bounded by  $m$  and contractive, it can be shown that  $|f^n(x) - f^n(y)| \leq k^{n-1} * 2m$ , which implies that  $f$  has a unique fixed point  $e$  and that all "orbits"  $(f^i(x))_i$  converge towards  $e$  and, more importantly, that  $\Pi = \{e\}$  (this is a variant of the Banach-Picard fixed point theorem). So, (CS1-CS2) are jointly sufficient for completeness.

### Appendix B: The Zeno World and the Cantor Set World

Here is a unidimensional version of the *Infinite Rep-4 Tiles World*: the *Zeno World*. Let  $f_h$  be the dichotomic function that associates to an interval  $[a, b]$  its first tile  $[a, \frac{b-a}{2}]$ . Let us call  $f_z$  its inverse.  $x_1 = [a, b]$  is composed of two copies of  $x_2 = f_h([a, b]) (= [a, \frac{b-a}{2}])$ . Which is composed of two copies of  $x_3 = f_h(x_2)...$

*Zeno World*. The fact that the interval at level  $i$  (two copies of which the interval at the preceding level is composed) is  $x_i$  is grounded on the fact that the interval at the level  $i + 1$  is  $x_{i+1}$ , where  $x_{i+1} = f_h(x_i)$ , that is,  $x_i = f_z(x_{i+1})$ . Here,  $u_i$  is the fact that the interval at level  $\#i$  is  $x_i$ :  $u_i = 'X_i(@) = x_i'$ , the flow function is  $f_z$ , and  $X_i = f_z \circ X_{i+1}$ .

Here again, the first fact is grounded on the second, which is likewise grounded on the third, etc., but that does not determine the first fact. It leaves completely open what the first interval is: it could very well be  $[0, 2]$  or  $[0, 17]...$  More



3601 deeply, the flow function  $f_z$  has no fixed point at all, so it does not even satisfy  
3602 (CN1).

3603 We can likewise put forward a simpler (albeit less graphic) one-dimensional  
3604 version of the *Sierpiński Gasket World*. This one is known as the standard  
3605 Cantor set. Let  $f_{ca}$  and  $f_{cb}$  be functions on a compact set of real numbers  
3606 that associate to a set the image of this set by  $g_{ca}(x) = \frac{x}{3}$  and  $g_{cb} = \frac{2}{3} +$   
3607  $\frac{x}{3}$ , respectively. The Cantor set can be obtained by iteratively applying the  
3608 shrinking (factor 1/3) and duplicating function  $f_c = f_{ca} \cup f_{cb}$  to any compact  
3609 set of real numbers. To fix the ideas,  $f_c$  associates  $\left[0, \frac{1}{3}\right] \cup \left[\frac{2}{3}, 1\right]$  to  $[0, 1]$  and  
3610 associates  $\left[0, \frac{1}{9}\right] \cup \left[\frac{2}{9}, \frac{1}{3}\right] \cup \left[\frac{2}{3}, \frac{7}{9}\right] \cup \left[\frac{8}{9}, 1\right]$  to  $\left[0, \frac{1}{3}\right] \cup \left[\frac{2}{3}, 1\right]$ , etc.

3611 *Cantor Set World*. At level 1, there is a set  $x_1$  that is composed of  
3612 two shrunk copies (scale 1/3) of the set  $x_2$  at level 2 (in the sense  
3613 that  $x_1 = f_c(x_2)$ ), the figure at level 2 is itself composed of two  
3614 shrunk copies (scale 1/3) of the figure at level 3 (in the sense that  
3615  $x_2 = f_c(x_3)$ )... The figure at level #1,  $x_1$ , is the Cantor set  $s$ , which  
3616 (fact) is grounded on the fact that the set at level #2 is  $x_2$ , which is  
3617 grounded on the fact that the figure at level #3 is  $x_3$ , etc.

3618 Here,  $u_i$  is the fact that the figure at level #i is  $x_i$  :  $u_i = 'X_i(@) = x_i'$ ,  
3619 the flow function is  $f_c$ , and  $X_i = f_c \circ X_{i+1}$ . The metaphysical laws  
3620 state that there exists at least a compact set and regiment the way  
3621 (reflected by the flow function  $f_c$ ) each set is composed of two shrunk  
3622 copies of the set at the next level.

3623 Here again, (CS1) (contractive character) is satisfied, and we can define the  
3624 domain of  $f_c$  so that (CS2) (boundedness) is satisfied as well. The infinite  
3625 chain of grounds is complete.\*

3626 Alexandre Billon  
3627  0000-0001-8905-0298  
3628 STL UMR 8163 – CNRS  
3629 Université de Lille  
3630 alexandre.billon@univ-lille.fr

\* I am grateful to the participants of the 2022 Ligerz workshop on non-wellfounded metaphysics where I presented this paper, as well as to two anonymous referees and Stephan Leuenberger for their useful comments, and to Marco Schori for his rigorous copyediting.

## References

- 3631
- 3632 BADER, Ralf M. 2017. "The Grounding Argument Against Non-Reductive Moral Real-
- 3633 ism." in *Oxford Studies in Metaethics*, volume XII, edited by Russ SHAFER-LANDAU,
- 3634 pp. 106–134. Oxford: Oxford University Press, doi:10.1093/oso/9780198805076.00
- 3635 3.0005.
- 3636 BARNESLEY, Michael, HUTCHINSON, John E. and STENFLO, Örjan. 2003. "V-Variable
- 3637 Fractals and Superfractals." ArXiv preprint, doi:10.48550/arXiv.math/0312314.
- 3638 BILLON, Alexandre. 2019. "Paradoxical Hypodoxes." *Synthese* 196(12): 5205–5229,
- 3639 doi:10.1007/s11229-018-1711-1.
- 3640 —. 2023. "Are Infinite Explanations Self-Explanatory?" *Erkenntnis* 88(5): 1935–1954,
- 3641 doi:10.1007/s10670-021-00436-3.
- 3642 BLISS, Ricki Leigh. 2013. "Viciousness and the Structure of Reality." *Philosophical*
- 3643 *Studies* 166(2): 399–418, doi:10.1007/s11098-012-0043-0.
- 3644 —. 2014. "Viciousness and Circles of Ground." *Metaphilosophy* 45(2): 245–256, doi:10
- 3645 .1111/meta.12072.
- 3646 —. 2019. "What Work the Fundamental?" *Erkenntnis* 84(2): 359–379, doi:10.1007/s1
- 3647 0670-017-9962-7.
- 3648 BLISS, Ricki Leigh and PRIEST, Graham, eds. 2018. *Reality and its Structure: Essays in*
- 3649 *Fundamentality*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, doi:10.1093/oso/978019875563
- 3650 0.001.0001.
- 3651 CAMERON, Ross P. 2008. "Turtles all the Way Down: Regress, Priority and Fun-
- 3652 damentality." *The Philosophical Quarterly* 58(230): 1–14, doi:10.1111/j.1467-
- 3653 9213.2007.509.x.
- 3654 —. 2022. *Chains of Being: Infinite Regress, Circularity, and Metaphysical Explanation*.
- 3655 Oxford: Oxford University Press, doi:10.1093/oso/9780198854272.001.0001.
- 3656 CHALMERS, David J. 2022. *Reality+: Virtual Worlds and the Problems of Philosophy*.
- 3657 New York: W.W. Norton & Co.
- 3658 DASGUPTA, Shamik. 2016. "Metaphysical Rationalism." *Noûs* 50(2): 379–418, doi:10.1
- 3659 111/nous.12082.
- 3660 FALCONER, Kenneth. 2003. *Fractal Geometry: Mathematical Foundations and Applica-*
- 3661 *tions*. Hoboken, New Jersey: John Wiley and Sons, Inc., doi:10.1002/0470013850.
- 3662 FINE, Kit. 2010. "Some Puzzles of Ground." *Notre Dame Journal of Formal Logic* 51(1):
- 3663 97–118, doi:10.1215/00294527-2010-007.
- 3664 —. 2012. "Guide to Ground." in *Metaphysical Grounding: Understanding the Structure of*
- 3665 *Reality*, edited by Fabrice CORREIA and Benjamin Sebastian SCHNIEDER, pp. 37–80.
- 3666 Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, doi:10.1017/cbo9781139149136.002.
- 3667 GARDNER, Martin. 2001. *The Colossal Book of Mathematics: Classic Puzzles, Paradoxes,*
- 3668 *and Problems*. New York: W.W. Norton & Co.

- 3669 GLAZIER, Martin. 2016. "Laws and the Completeness of the Fundamental." in *Reality*  
3670 *Making*, edited by Mark JAGO, pp. 11–37. Mind Association Occasional Series.  
3671 Oxford: Oxford University Press, doi:10.1093/acprof:oso/9780198755722.003.0002.
- 3672 HAWKING, Stephen W. and MLODINOW, Leonard. 2010. *The Grand Design*. New York:  
3673 Bantam Books.
- 3674 HUME, David. 1907. *Dialogues Concerning Natural Religion*. Edinburgh: William Black-  
3675 wood. Edited by Bruce M'Ewen, ark:/13960/t03x8qw9r.
- 3676 KAPPES, Yannic. 2022. "Self-Explanation and Empty-Base Explanation." *Journal of the*  
3677 *American Philosophical Association* 8(3): 436–453, doi:10.1017/apa.2021.8.
- 3678 —. 2023. "Grounding Ground and the (In-)Escapable Ill-Foundedness of the Inclusive  
3679 'Explains.'" *Dialectica* 77(4): 521–537, doi:10.48106/dial.v77.i4.06.
- 3680 KMENT, Boris. 2014. *Modality and Explanatory Reasoning*. Oxford: Oxford University  
3681 Press, doi:10.1093/acprof:oso/9780199604685.001.0001.
- 3682 KRIPKE, Saul A. 1975. "Outline of a Theory of Truth." *The Journal of Philosophy* 72(19):  
3683 690–716. Reprinted in Kripke (2011, 75–98), doi:10.2307/2024634.
- 3684 —. 2011. *Philosophical Troubles: Collected Papers, Volume 1*. Oxford: Oxford University  
3685 Press, doi:10.1093/acprof:oso/9780199730155.001.0001.
- 3686 LEIBNIZ, Gottfried Wilhelm. 1989. "On the Radical Origination of Things." in *Philosoph-*  
3687 *ical Papers and Letters: A Selection*, pp. 486–491. Dordrecht: Kluwer Academic Pub-  
3688 lishers. Essay dated November 23, 1697, unpublished until 1840, doi:10.1007/978-  
3689 94-010-1426-7\_52.
- 3690 LESLIE, John. 1979. *Value and Existence*. Lanham, Maryland: Rowman & Littlefield.
- 3691 —. 2003. *Infinite Minds: A Philosophical Cosmology*. Oxford: Oxford University Press,  
3692 doi:10.1093/acprof:oso/9780199248933.001.0001.
- 3693 LITLAND, Jon Erling. 2017. "Grounding Ground." in *Oxford Studies in Metaphysics*,  
3694 volume X, edited by Karen BENNETT and Dean W. ZIMMERMAN, pp. 279–316. New  
3695 York: Oxford University Press, doi:10.1093/acprof:oso/9780198791973.003.0012.
- 3696 MENZIES, Peter and BEEBEE, Helen. 2019. "Counterfactual Theories of Causation." in  
3697 *The Stanford Encyclopedia of Philosophy*. Stanford, California: The Metaphysics  
3698 Research Lab, Center for the Study of Language and Information, [https://plato.st](https://plato.stanford.edu/archives/win2019/entries/causation-counterfactual/)  
3699 [anford.edu/archives/win2019/entries/causation-counterfactual/](https://plato.stanford.edu/archives/win2019/entries/causation-counterfactual/).
- 3700 MILLER, Barry. 1996. *A Most Unlikely God: A Philosophical Enquiry Into the Nature of*  
3701 *God*. Notre Dame, Indiana: University of Notre Dame Press.
- 3702 MORGANTI, Matteo. 2015. "Dependence, Justification and Explanation: Must Reality  
3703 be Well-Founded?" *Erkenntnis* 80(3): 555–572, doi:10.1007/s10670-014-9655-4.
- 3704 NOLAN, Daniel Patrick. 2018. "Cosmic Loops." in *Reality and its Structure: Essays in*  
3705 *Fundamentality*, edited by Ricki Leigh BLISS and Graham PRIEST, pp. 91–106.  
3706 Oxford: Oxford University Press, doi:10.1093/oso/9780198755630.003.0005.
- 3707 NOZICK, Robert. 1981. *Philosophical Explanations*. Cambridge, Massachusetts: Harvard  
3708 University Press.

- 3709 O'HEAR, Anthony, ed. 2018. *Metaphysics*. Royal Institute of Philosophy Supplements  
3710 n. 82. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- 3711 OBERLE, Thomas. 2023. "No Work for Fundamental Facts." *The Philosophical Quarterly*  
3712 73(4): 983–1003, doi:10.1093/pq/pqac071.
- 3713 PARFIT, Derek. 2011. *On What Matters. Volume Two*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.  
3714 Edited and introduced by Samuel Scheffler, doi:10.1093/acprof:osobl/9780199572  
3715 816.001.0001.
- 3716 PRIEST, Graham. 2014. *One. Being an Investigation into the Unity of Reality and of its*  
3717 *Parts, including the Singular Object which is Nothingness*. Oxford: Oxford University  
3718 Press, doi:10.1093/acprof:oso/9780199688258.001.0001.
- 3719 ROSEN, Gideon. 2017. "Ground by Law." in *Philosophical Issues 27: Metaphysics*, edited  
3720 by Jonathan SCHAFFER, pp. 279–301. Malden, Massachusetts: Wiley-Blackwell,  
3721 doi:10.1111/phis.12105.
- 3722 ROWE, William L. 1970. "Two Criticisms of the Cosmological Argument." *The Monist*  
3723 54(3): 441–459, doi:10.5840/monist197054329.
- 3724 SALLOWS, Lee. 2014. "More on Self-Tiling Tile Sets." *Mathematics Magazine* 87(2):  
3725 100–112, doi:10.4169/math.mag.87.2.100.
- 3726 SCHAFFER, Jonathan. 2010. "Monism: The Priority of the Whole." *The Philosophical*  
3727 *Review* 119(1): 31–76, doi:10.1215/00318108-2009-025.
- 3728 —. 2016. "Grounding in the Image of Causation." *Philosophical Studies* 173(1): 49–100,  
3729 doi:10.1007/s11098-014-0438-1.
- 3730 —. 2017. "Laws for Metaphysical Explanation." in *Philosophical Issues 27: Meta-*  
3731 *physics*, edited by Jonathan SCHAFFER, pp. 302–321. Malden, Massachusetts:  
3732 Wiley-Blackwell. Reprinted in O'Hear (2018, 1–22), doi:10.1111/phis.12111.
- 3733 SCHILPP, Paul Arthur, ed. 1949. *Albert Einstein: Philosopher-Scientist*. The Library of  
3734 Living Philosophers n. 7. LaSalle, Illinois: Open Court Publishing Co.
- 3735 SIMPSON, Alex K. 2017. "Cyclic Arithmetic is Equivalent to Peano Arithmetic." in  
3736 *Foundations of Software Science and Computation Structures. Proceedings of the*  
3737 *20th International Conference, FOSSACS 2017, held as part of the European Joint*  
3738 *Conferences on Theory and Practice of Software, ETAPS 2017, Uppsala, Sweden,*  
3739 *April 22–29, 2017*, edited by Javier ESPARZA and Andrzej S. MURAWSKI, pp. 283–300.  
3740 Lectures in Computer Science n. 10203. Cham: Springer, doi:10.1007/978-3-662-  
3741 54458-7\_17.
- 3742 ŞİMŞEK, Maşuk. 2023. "Determination Relations and Metaphysical Explanations."  
3743 *Dialectica* 77(4): 505–519, doi:10.48106/dial.v77.i4.05.
- 3744 STEINHART, Eric Charles. 2014. *Your Digital Afterlives: Computational Theories of Life*  
3745 *after Death*. London: Palgrave Macmillan, doi:10.1057/9781137363862.

# Determination Relations and Metaphysical Explanations

MAŞUK ŞİMŞEK

Ross Cameron (2022) argues that metaphysical infinitists should reject the generally accepted idea that metaphysical determination relations back metaphysical explanations. Otherwise, it won't be possible for them to come up with successful explanations for the existence of dependent entities in non-wellfounded chains of dependence. I argue that his argument suffers from what he calls the finitist dogma, although indirectly so. However, there is a better way of motivating Cameron's conclusion. Assuming Cameron's principle of ESSENCE, explanations for the existence of dependent entities turn out to be circular if determination relations back explanations. This latter argument provides a stronger case as it puts the foundationalist under significant pressure, besides putting the infinitist under some pressure, to deny the idea that determination relations back explanations.

Reality is vast and variegated. There are concrete objects, events, mathematical objects, persons, economies, etc. This variety, nevertheless, doesn't preclude unity in what exists. Things are connected to each other via different kinds of relations, making it possible for us to comprehend them in unison. A decrease in the interest rate causes an increase in inflation; a cell is composed of organelles; the fact that my pen is cylindrical grounds the fact that it has a shape; the set of natural numbers ontologically depends on the existence of natural numbers, etc. Some of these relations are causal and are relied on in causal explanations. Others are non-causal. *Metaphysical determination relations* has lately been used in the literature as an umbrella term for the other, non-causal kinds of relations.

It seems obvious that causal relations are explanatory. Scientists, for instance, appeal to causal relations in their explanations, and we think that

3774 those explanations are supported by relevant causal relations. It is said that  
 3775 one explains a phenomenon by determining its cause (Ratner 2003).<sup>1</sup>

3776 Can we say the same thing about non-causal determination relations as  
 3777 well? Is it obviously true that metaphysical determination relations support  
 3778 explanations? Some think that it is difficult to see what use metaphysical  
 3779 determination relations are for unless they are explanatory (Bliss 2018). Based  
 3780 on this motivation, metaphysical determination relations are usually taken to  
 3781 support explanations of a distinct kind, i.e., *metaphysical explanations*. Just  
 3782 like causal relations back causal explanations, metaphysical determination  
 3783 relations back metaphysical explanations. One way to understand metaphys-  
 3784 ical explanations is to take them as *what it is* claims (Cameron 2022, 135).  
 3785 Consider the relation of set membership. What it is for the singleton  $\{x\}$ , for  
 3786 instance, to exist is to have  $x$  as an only member. Now, the idea is that this  
 3787 explanation is backed by a relation between the singleton  $\{x\}$  and its member  
 3788  $x$ .

3789 Ross Cameron (2022) attacks this widespread assumption. Unless you are a  
 3790 metaphysical foundationalist—that is, you think a chain of metaphysical deter-  
 3791 mination should be wellfounded, i.e., tethered to an ultimate foundation—you  
 3792 need to accept that there are certain cases where metaphysical determination  
 3793 relations don't back metaphysical explanations. This argument, if successful,  
 3794 forces metaphysical infinitists and metaphysical holists—those who think,  
 3795 respectively, that infinite or circular chains of metaphysical determination  
 3796 untethered to a foundation are possible—to deny that metaphysical determi-  
 3797 nation relations necessarily back metaphysical explanations.

3798 The layout of the essay is as follows: After summarizing Cameron's ar-  
 3799 gument in section 1, I criticize it in section 2 by appealing to a distinction  
 3800 between *Objectivist* and *Subjectivist* senses of explanation and to the *Hume-*  
 3801 *Edwards Principle*. In section 3, I offer an alternative to Cameron's argument  
 3802 by using Cameron's premises. Throughout 3.1–3.3, I evaluate ways of reacting  
 3803 to the argument I offer. I conclude in section 4 by signifying the advantages  
 3804 of my alternative over Cameron's argument.

## 3805 1 Cameron's Argument

3806 Cameron's argument is based on two principles:

---

1 Thanks to an anonymous referee for suggesting this analogy.

3807 ESSENCE. When  $x$  ontologically depends on  $y$ , the fact that  $x$  onto-  
3808 logically depends on  $y$  is part of  $x$ 's nature.

3809 DEPENDENCE. When  $x$  ontologically depends on  $y$ , this dependence  
3810 holds at least partly in virtue of the existence or nature of  $y$ .

3811 Applied to our earlier example, **ESSENCE** says that fact  $\langle \{x\}$  depends on  $x \rangle^2$  is  
3812 part of  $\{x\}$ 's nature.  $\{x\}$  is the singleton of  $x$ , and hence a complete explanation  
3813 of its nature has to include an appeal to the fact that  $\{x\}$  depends on  $x$ ;  $\{x\}$   
3814 could not exist and be the set it is without depending on  $x$ . And **DEPENDENCE**  
3815 says that  $x$  is at least partly responsible for the fact that  $\{x\}$  depends on  $x$ .  
3816 Either  $x$  and  $\{x\}$  are responsible for the dependence relation together or it  
3817 holds solely because of  $x$ . In either case,  $x$  is at least partly responsible for the  
3818 relation.

3819 Now, these two principles make the success of any explanation for the  
3820 existence and nature of  $\{x\}$  hostage to any explanation for the existence  
3821 and nature of  $x$ . The mechanics of this argument are as follows: Because  
3822  $\langle \{x\}$  depends on  $x \rangle$  is part of  $\{x\}$ 's nature, by **ESSENCE**, we need to appeal  
3823 to this dependence relation in order to give a complete explanation for  $\{x\}$ .  
3824 Because  $x$  is at least partly responsible for the dependence relation, by **DEPEN-**  
3825 **DENCE**, our appeal to the dependence relation takes us to  $x$ . Thus, in order  
3826 to give a complete explanation for  $\{x\}$ , we are compelled to account for  $x$ . In  
3827 other words, the success of our explanation for the existence and nature of  
3828  $\{x\}$  is hostage to the explanation for the existence and nature of  $x$ .

3829 Now, if  $x$  is not ontologically dependent on another entity, it will be possible  
3830 to provide a successful explanation for its existence and nature. This successful  
3831 explanation will form the bedrock for the success of the explanation for  $\{x\}$ .  
3832 But if  $x$  is a dependent entity, we will be faced with the same problem once  
3833 again. For instance, if  $x$  is a singleton, whose sole member is  $y$ , the success  
3834 of the explanation for  $x$  will be hostage to the explanation for  $y$ . For, again,  
3835 **ESSENCE** will take us from the explanation for the existence and nature of  $x$   
3836 to the fact that  $x$  depends on  $y$ , and **DEPENDENCE** will take us from there to  $y$ .  
3837 The success of the explanation will be deferred once more. Moreover, unless  
3838 this ontological dependence chain bottoms out at the level of a foundational  
3839 entity, this deferral will go on and on. If the chain is infinite or circular, the

---

2 Throughout the paper, I will use ' $\langle f \rangle$ ' to mean 'the fact that  $f$ ' following common practice.

3840 success of the first explanation, along with any other explanation in the chain,  
3841 will be deferred infinitely.

3842 This means that in order for us to have a complete explanation for the exist-  
3843 tence and nature of an entity on a chain of ontological dependence, that chain  
3844 needs to be tethered to a foundation. Even if there is no problem about the  
3845 possibility of infinite or circular non-wellfounded chains of dependence per  
3846 se, metaphysical foundationalism will seem to have an explanatory advantage  
3847 over its rivals. Therefore, Cameron concludes, it's better for the metaphys-  
3848 ical infinitist and holist to deny the claim that metaphysical explanations  
3849 are backed by metaphysical determination relations, thereby defusing the  
3850 supposed explanatory disadvantage.

## 3852 **2 Completing an Infinite Chain of Explanation**

3852 It isn't clear whether Cameron's argument, by itself, can motivate this con-  
3853 clusion, for it depends on a questionable further assumption: that an infinite  
3854 chain of explanation cannot be successfully completed. The reason for this is  
3855 not merely that the explanatory chain is infinite. For, that would be begging  
3856 the question against infinitism. The reason why an infinite chain of expla-  
3857 nation cannot be successfully completed, he says, is that one cannot even  
3858 make a single successful explanation in such a chain. The success of a single  
3859 explanation in the chain is hostage to the successes of every subsequent ex-  
3860 planation in the infinite chain; since the chain is infinite, the success of the  
3861 "original explanation is never established" (Cameron 2022, 100–101).

### 3861 *Subjectivist vs. Objectivist Explanations*

3863 Yet, unless we are misled by the spatiotemporal connotations of the chain  
3864 metaphor, there is no reason to think this. When we talk about explanation in  
3865 this context, we are not using what Bird (2005) calls the *subjectivist* sense of the  
3866 word but the *objectivist* sense of it. In the first sense, an explanation is an act of  
3867 explaining. As with all other doings of a subject, an explanatory act takes time.  
3868 As Lewis (1986) points out, alluding to Bromberger (1965), questions like  
3869 "Who gave the explanation?" "When was the explanation given?" or "Where  
3870 was it?" apply to this sense of the word.

3871 In some contexts, however, explanation seems independent of subjects. For  
3872 instance, when the physicalist says that there is a physical explanation for  
3873 every physical phenomenon, the claim is not that each physical phenomenon



3874 is explained by some person or that a complete physical explanation of every  
3875 phenomenon could be given by many people working in tandem. Rather,  
3876 what is claimed is that each physical phenomenon stands in an explanatory  
3877 relation to another. Therefore, the questions cited above do not apply to this  
3878 second sense. Instead, questions like “Is it very complicated?” “Who thought  
3879 of it first?” or “Does anyone know it?” apply.

3880 Explanations in this objectivist sense are not doings of subjects but proposi-  
3881 tions in which explanatory relations are featured. These are the relations that  
3882 allow us to make sense of the world. Any act of explanation is supposed to  
3883 allude to these explanatory relations. Nevertheless, it is possible for the objec-  
3884 tivist explanation not to be conveyed at all in such an explanatory act. Lewis  
3885 states that an explanation in this second sense “might even be information  
3886 that never could be conveyed, for it might have no finite expression in any  
3887 language we ever use” (1986, 218).

3888 Now, it would be sensible to deny the possibility of a complete infinite  
3889 chain of subjectivist explanation, since such a claim would require infinitely  
3890 many acts of explanation. When, however, infinitists claim that an infinite  
3891 chain of explanation can be complete, they aren’t positing infinite chains of  
3892 explanatory acts. Rather, they are using the objectivist sense of explanation.  
3893 And in this sense, as Lewis endorsed above, the explanatory story can in fact  
3894 be infinite, even though it might be impossible to express it in an explanatory  
3895 act.

## 2.2 Completing an Infinite Chain of Explanations

3897 How, then, should we conceive an infinite chain of explanation as successfully  
3898 completed? The notion of completeness we need to employ here, I claim, needs  
3899 to address completeness requirements in holist and infinitist cases as much  
3900 as foundationalist cases, thereby staying impartial in the debate among these  
3901 camps. The following criterion, namely the *Hume-Edwards Principle*, meets  
3902 this condition: An explanatory chain is complete if and only if each and every  
3903 explanandum in the chain gets an explanation (Rowe 1970).<sup>3</sup> That is to say,  
3904 if nothing in the chain is left out, we can say that it is a complete chain of  
3905 explanation. Applied to the case of infinite chains, this means that an infinite  
3906 chain of explanation is complete provided that every entity in the chain gets  
3907 an explanation in the objectivist sense.

---

3 I need to thank an anonymous referee for their helpful suggestion in contextualizing this principle.

3908 What reason can one have to deny that every entity in an infinite chain can  
 3909 get an explanation? If the success of each explanation were hostage to the  
 3910 existence of a further explanation in the subjectivist sense, this would require  
 3911 us to try to complete a never-ending journey. However, when we formulate  
 3912 the explanation in the objectivist sense, we don't have such a problem. The  
 3913 success of an explanation, in this case, won't be hostage to the existence of an  
 3914 explanatory act but to the existence of the next explanation in the objectivist  
 3915 sense, which doesn't require time.

3916 Pruss (1998) provides three counterexamples to the Hume-Edwards Princi-  
 3917 ple. I will now go over Pruss' examples and show that they fail.

3918 In the first case, there is a cannonball that is shot out at 11:58 and lands at  
 3919 noon. Let  $C$  be the set of time-slices of the cannonball's movement beginning  
 3920 from but not including 11:59 to and including 12:00. That is,  $C$  is the collection  
 3921 of the cannonball's states in the last minute of its movement. Pruss argues  
 3922 that  $C$  fits the Hume-Edwards Principle. It consists of infinitely many states  
 3923 at infinitely many time-slices in the last minute. Moreover, given the relevant  
 3924 Newtonian laws of physics, each state within  $C$  can be completely explained  
 3925 by a state preceding that state in  $C$ . Now, if the principle is true, then  $C$  must  
 3926 be completely explained by itself, since each and every state in it is allegedly  
 3927 explained by a previous state. This would mean that the movement of the  
 3928 cannonball in the last minute could be explained without appealing to the  
 3929 cannon at all, which is absurd. Therefore, the thought goes, the principle is  
 3930 false.

3931 This case, on the face of it, seems to fit the Hume-Edwards Principle. Be-  
 3932 cause the time-slice at 11:59 is not included in  $C$ , there is no time-slice in  $C$   
 3933 that can be deemed the first in the series. So, whichever time-slice you pick,  
 3934 there will be infinitely many time-slices preceding it in  $C$ . So, we are expected  
 3935 to accept that each explanandum in  $C$  is explained by its predecessor in  $C$ .

3936 Nevertheless, I claim, this counterexample doesn't work. For, either the  
 3937 state of the cannonball at 11:58, call it  $T^*$ , doesn't explain anything in  $C$  or  
 3938  $C$  is not complete and hence doesn't fit the Hume-Edwards Principle. But  
 3939 surely,  $T^*$  explains infinitely many states succeeding it in  $C$ . For, according to  
 3940 Pruss' account, any state of the cannonball is explained by states preceding  
 3941 it, and there are states in  $C$  that are preceded by  $T^*$ . The fact that we aren't  
 3942 able to pick a single state in  $C$  that could be deemed *the immediate successor*  
 3943 *of*  $T^*$  doesn't prevent us from stating that there are states in  $C$  succeeding  $T^*$ .  
 3944 There are, in fact, infinitely many successors of  $T^*$  in  $C$ . Therefore, there are  
 3945 infinitely many explananda in  $C$  that are left without an explanation when  $T^*$

3946 is not included in the explanation. It's true that *C* is not self-explanatory, but  
3947 it's not true that every member in *C* is explained. Therefore, Pruss' cannonball  
3948 example doesn't meet the Hume-Edwards Principle and, hence, doesn't falsify  
3949 it.

3950 This is a paradigmatic example of using a mistaken analogy against non-  
3951 wellfounded infinite chains. Non-wellfounded infinite chains are, as Oberle  
3952 (2022) points out, categorically different from wellfounded infinite chains  
3953 whose foundation is cut out. An infinite series of causation whose primary  
3954 cause is cut out is not a non-wellfounded series. For, a non-wellfounded series  
3955 wouldn't need a primary cause in the beginning. *C* in Pruss' example is like  
3956 a wellfounded series whose link to its foundation is severed. The fact that  
3957 we can slice *C* into infinitely many states doesn't automatically make it a  
3958 non-wellfounded series. That's why we can coherently claim that without  
3959 *T\**, there are states in *C* that aren't explained. If *C* was a non-wellfounded  
3960 infinite series, we wouldn't be able to claim that there are states outside *C*,  
3961 like *T\**, without which we cannot explain certain states in *C*. So, even though  
3962 Pruss' target wasn't non-wellfounded infinite chains but the Hume-Edwards  
3963 Principle, his argument requires finding such a non-wellfounded infinite  
3964 chain and demonstrating that explaining all the explananda in it doesn't  
3965 suffice to explain the whole of the chain.

3966 Pruss' remaining two counterexamples target circular explanations, and  
3967 they reiterate the same mistake of confounding non-wellfounded chains with  
3968 wellfounded chains without a foundation. In one of them, there is a classical  
3969 time travel scenario in which a woman has traveled back in time to give birth  
3970 to herself. In the other, we are expected to think that the collection of all the  
3971 chickens and the collection of all the eggs in the world form an explanatory  
3972 cycle. Both examples fail to address the issue of completeness.

3973 In the time travel example, either the time travel circle exists independently  
3974 of anything else or it depends on an external cause. If it is independent, then  
3975 it can be claimed that explaining the parts is sufficient to explain the whole of  
3976 the circle. This doesn't even count as biting the bullet since the bullet was bit  
3977 when you accepted that such an independent circle of time travel is possible.  
3978 The explanatory story simply would follow the ontological story. If, however,  
3979 you think that the time travel scenario wouldn't be metaphysically possible  
3980 without an external ground, then the parts of the circle are not completely  
3981 grounded on each other since they also depend on the external cause as well.  
3982 So, without an appeal to the external cause, there will be explananda in the

3983 chain that aren't explained. In either case, the Hume-Edwards Principle is  
 3984 not falsified.

3985 The last example is analogous to the second horn of the time travel example.  
 3986 The circle formed by the set of all the chickens and the set of all the eggs does  
 3987 depend on external causes. Given the evolutionary history of chickens, the  
 3988 set of chickens and the set of eggs don't form a closed circle. Therefore, an  
 3989 explanation of those two sets would not leave any unexplained explananda in  
 3990 the circle. Thus, the principle will again not be falsified.

3991 To sum up, the Hume-Edwards Principle provides a criterion of complete-  
 3992 ness favorable to the infinitist.<sup>4</sup> It allows her to say that every link in an infinite  
 3993 chain gets an objective explanation. Although Cameron's argument doesn't  
 3994 directly depend on finitist dogma since it doesn't depend simply on the impos-  
 3995 sibility of infinite chains of explanations, it still reiterates a similar mistake at  
 3996 the level of success of explanations. It depends on the idea that an infinite  
 3997 chain of explanations in which the success of each is hostage to the success  
 3998 of the next cannot be complete and that it cannot be complete because it  
 3999 is infinite. Therefore, as it stands, Cameron's argument is unsuccessful in  
 4000 forcing the finitist or holist to deny that metaphysical explanations are backed  
 4001 by metaphysical dependence relations.

### 4003 **The Circularity Argument**

4003 There is, however, a better way of arguing that explanations should be pulled  
 4004 apart from determination relations. Cameron's argument was supposed to  
 4005 compel the infinitist to separate metaphysical explanations from metaphys-  
 4006 ical determination relations. As we will see, my argument *could* be used to  
 4007 motivate the infinitist to separate explanations from determination relations:  
 4008 she can only dodge this pressure on pain of losing an epistemic advantage  
 4009 over metaphysical holism. Metaphysical foundationalists, however, will be  
 4010 under more significant pressure to separate explanations from determination.

4011 Assuming the principle of **ESSENCE**, the idea that explanations follow  
 4012 from determination relations faces a circularity problem. For, the dependence

---

4 See Billon (2023) for a different conception of how non-wellfounded infinite chains of explanations can be complete. Billon doesn't take the Hume-Edwards Principle to be providing a successful account of completeness for non-wellfounded infinite chains since he thinks this principle fails to give a separate explanation for the existence of the whole chain. However, he proposes another account according to which there are complete non-wellfounded infinite chains of explanation.

4013 relation is both part of what is supposed to give rise to the explanation for the  
 4014 existence of the dependent entity and part of what is to be explained.

4015 Part of the essence of a set is the fact that it depends on its members for  
 4016 its existence and identity. The fact that  $\{x\}$  depends on  $x$  for its existence and  
 4017 identity, for instance, is part of the essence of  $\{x\}$ . So, any explanation for the  
 4018 existence and nature of  $\{x\}$  also needs to account for the fact that  $\{x\}$  depends  
 4019 on  $x$ . Yet, given that explanations are backed by determination relations, the  
 4020 fact that  $\{x\}$  depends on  $x$  is among the things that make the explanation  
 4021 possible. Hence, the fact that  $\{x\}$  depends on  $x$  is part of both *explananda* and  
 4022 *explanantia*. Therefore, the explanation is circular.

4023 The circularity argument can be formalized as follows:<sup>5</sup>

- 4024 (1) If  $x$  depends on  $y$ , then  $\langle x$  depends on  $y \rangle$  is part of  $x$ 's nature.  
 4025 (ESSENCE)
- 4026 (2)  $\{x\}$  depends on  $x$ . (Premise)
- 4027 (3)  $\therefore \langle \{x\}$  depends on  $x \rangle$  is part of  $\{x\}$ 's nature. (By 1 & 2)
- 4028 (4) If a fact  $f$  is part of  $x$ 's nature, then  $f$  must be among the *explananda*  
 4029 of any explanation of  $x$ 's existence and nature. (Premise)
- 4030 (5)  $\therefore \langle \{x\}$  depends on  $x \rangle$  must be among the *explananda* of any explana-  
 4031 tion of  $\{x\}$ 's existence and nature. (By 3 & 4)
- 4032 (6) If  $x$  depends on  $y$ , then  $\langle x$  depends on  $y \rangle$  must be among the *explanans*  
 4033 of any explanation of  $x$ 's existence and nature. (BACKING)
- 4034 (7)  $\therefore \langle \{x\}$  depends on  $x \rangle$  must be among the *explanans* of any explanation  
 4035 of  $\{x\}$ 's existence and nature. (By 2 & 6)
- 4036 (8)  $\therefore \langle \{x\}$  depends on  $x \rangle$  must be among both the *explananda* and the  
 4037 *explanans* of any explanation of  $\{x\}$ 's existence and nature. (By 5 & 7)

4038 Assuming **BACKING** and **ESSENCE**, we have arrived at the conclusion that  
 4039 explanations regarding the existence of certain dependent entities are circular.  
 4040 How should we react to this conclusion? There are three main options.  
 4041 Rejecting **ESSENCE**, embracing circularity, or rejecting **BACKING**. I will now  
 4042 go over these options one by one.

---

5 I am indebted to Jonathan Payton for the fruitful discussion we had and the constructive criticism he offered regarding this formalization.

### 3.1 *Rejecting Essence*

4044 One way to oppose the circularity argument is to reject **ESSENCE**. **ESSENCE**,  
 4045 after all, is a strong condition requiring dependent entities to have their depen-  
 4046 dence relations essentially. This might not obtain in all cases of metaphysical  
 4047 determination. In the case of a ship and the parts composing it, for instance,  
 4048 the ship ontologically depends on its parts, but this dependence isn't part of  
 4049 the nature of that ship. That ship can be that very ship, even if it has different  
 4050 parts. Then, the circularity in the explanations for dependent entities can be  
 4051 avoided in cases involving certain metaphysical determination relations like  
 4052 composition.

4053 It's true that there are cases where **ESSENCE** doesn't apply. But, still, there  
 4054 are also cases where it applies. And, provided that we don't embrace circular-  
 4055 ity, that there are some cases to which **ESSENCE** applies is sufficient for the  
 4056 project of pulling apart explanations from determination relations. For, as  
 4057 Cameron (2022, 99) states, that project requires showing not that explanations  
 4058 can always be separated from determination relations but that they can be  
 4059 separated at least in some cases of determination.

4060 What remains, then, is demonstrating cases where **ESSENCE** applies. And,  
 4061 incidentally, we have just the case for that: part of the essence of a set is the  
 4062 fact that it depends on its members. It would be impossible to know what a  
 4063 set is and to be able to identify which set one is thinking and talking about  
 4064 without grasping the idea that sets depend essentially on their members (Lowe  
 4065 2016).

4066 Let's try to make sense of the scenario in which we reject **ESSENCE**. What  
 4067 would this mean for sets? Applied to our example, **ESSENCE** states that part  
 4068 of what it is to be  $\{x\}$  is the fact that  $\{x\}$  depends on its member,  $x$ , for its  
 4069 existence and identity. To reject this, one needs to claim that  $\{x\}$  could have  
 4070 been what it is without depending on  $x$  for its identity. But how can  $\{x\}$  be  
 4071 what it is, i.e., the singleton of  $x$ , without depending on  $x$ ? Is it possible for  $\{x\}$   
 4072 to be the singleton of  $x$  if it has another entity, say  $y$ , as its member? This is  
 4073 obviously absurd. Then, at least in the case of sets, we can say that **ESSENCE**  
 4074 is applicable.

### 3.2 *Embracing Circularity*

4076 Another way to react to the circularity argument is to accept the conclusion but  
 4077 render it harmless by opening a place for circular metaphysical explanations.

4078 If we embrace circularity in metaphysical explanations, the argument won't  
4079 compel us to deny that metaphysical explanations are backed by metaphysical  
4080 determination relations. But holists, infinitists, and foundationalists aren't in  
4081 the same boat in the debate concerning circularity.

4082 First of all, metaphysical holists already embrace circularity in metaphysical  
4083 structures. They take circular chains of metaphysical determination relations  
4084 to be possible. This means that regress, by itself, isn't a problem for them. Why  
4085 not, then, embrace both the backing claim and circularity in this matter, and  
4086 claim that metaphysical explanations, following metaphysical determination  
4087 relations, form circles?

4088 Circular explanations are usually rejected on the basis of epistemic con-  
4089 cerns. For instance, a subject wouldn't gain any knowledge from a circular  
4090 explanation. Even if there isn't any problem about circularity in general, there  
4091 is, the objection goes, a problem with circularity in explanations.

4092 In response to this objection, we need to recall the distinction I employed  
4093 above between explanations that are dependent on subjects and explanations  
4094 that aren't. In the sense we use when we talk about metaphysical explanations,  
4095 explanations are independent of subjects. That is the reason why I claimed  
4096 that an infinitist can accept the possibility of infinitely long chains of meta-  
4097 physical explanation, even though no human being can get a complete grasp  
4098 of it, let alone give a complete account of it. This is to say that epistemic  
4099 concerns relevant for explanations in the subjectivist sense aren't necessarily  
4100 relevant for explanations in the objectivist sense. Metaphysical holists, then,  
4101 can bite the bullet and claim that circularity is acceptable in metaphysical  
4102 explanations as it is acceptable for them in metaphysical determination rela-  
4103 tions. Metaphysical holists, therefore, are under no pressure to reject backing  
4104 on the face of the circularity argument, for embracing circularity is consistent  
4105 with their overall stance in this debate.

4106 Metaphysical infinitists have two options. They can either side with holists  
4107 and embrace circularity, which will enable them to hold on to **BACKING**, or  
4108 they can reject circularity, in which case they will be under pressure to deny  
4109 **BACKING**.

4110 Embracing circularity is arguably consistent with metaphysical infinitism  
4111 in general. The account of completeness in explanatory chains I employed  
4112 above, for instance, allows for both infinite and circular complete chains of

4113 metaphysical explanations.<sup>6</sup> If everything to be explained in a chain gets an  
 4114 explanation, that explanatory chain is complete regardless of whether it is  
 4115 infinite or circular. If an infinitist chooses this path, she will be under no  
 4116 pressure from the circularity argument to deny **BACKING**.

4117 Metaphysical infinitists, nevertheless, can stay cautious about circularity  
 4118 on the basis of epistemic concerns. Thus, they can claim an advantage over  
 4119 holism despite being in the same boat in arguing for the possibility of non-  
 4120 wellfounded chains of being. An example of such an argument might be as  
 4121 follows: Even though it won't be possible for a subject to grasp an infinite chain  
 4122 of metaphysical explanations completely, every act of explaining that subject  
 4123 attempts has the potential to appeal to further links in the chain of explanation  
 4124 and, hence, to yield new knowledge. Therefore, metaphysical infinitism meets  
 4125 epistemic requirements. However, the same cannot be said for metaphysical  
 4126 holism. Once a subject grasps a circular chain of metaphysical explanations in  
 4127 its totality, their acts of explaining will stop yielding new knowledge. For, none  
 4128 of the *explanans* featuring in their acts of explanations will be new. Therefore,  
 4129 metaphysical infinitism has an advantage over metaphysical holism. Should  
 4130 metaphysical infinitists choose this latter path and hold on to their epistemic  
 4131 advantage over metaphysical holism, they will be under pressure from the  
 4132 circularity argument to deny **BACKING**.

4133 Lastly, metaphysical foundationalists have only one viable option regarding  
 4134 circularity. They must reject circularity, for they do believe that there is a prob-  
 4135 lem with circularity in general. Otherwise, the foundationalist case against  
 4136 holism would be weakened since it is raised mainly on the basis of circular-  
 4137 ity concerns. So, foundationalists can neither reject **ESSENCE** nor embrace  
 4138 circularity. The only remaining option is to reject **BACKING**.

### 3.3 Rejecting the Backing Claim

4140 The third way to react to the circularity argument is to reject **BACKING**. If one  
 4141 denies that metaphysical explanations are backed by metaphysical determi-  
 4142 nation relations, then there will be no requirement to include the relevant  
 4143 determination relation among the *explanans* in an explanation of a dependent  
 4144 entity's existence and nature. Thus, the circularity will be avoided.

---

6 I need to thank an anonymous referee for their helpful comments on the subject of circularity in relation to metaphysical infinitism.



4145 Metaphysical holists, as stated above, can react to the circularity argument  
4146 by embracing circularity. They are, therefore, under no pressure to deny **BACK-**  
4147 **ING**. Metaphysical infinitists, however, have a choice to make in the face of  
4148 the circularity argument. They can either hold onto **BACKING**, like metaphysical  
4149 holists, or they can give up **BACKING** in order to retain an explanatory  
4150 advantage over holism. Metaphysical infinitists, then, are under some pres-  
4151 sure to deny **BACKING** in the face of the circularity argument. Metaphysical  
4152 foundationalists cannot embrace circularity, so they are under substantial  
4153 pressure to reject **BACKING**.

#### 4154 **4 Conclusion**


4155 I argued that Cameron's argument for separating metaphysical explanations  
4156 from metaphysical determination relations is not successful. I offered, instead,  
4157 an alternative argument on the basis of premises Cameron makes use of,  
4158 namely **ESSENCE** and **BACKING**. Cameron, in fact, comes very close to identi-  
4159 fying the circularity in explanations of the existence and nature of dependent  
4160 entities. He admits that  $\langle E1 \text{ ontologically depends on } E2 \rangle$  is, by **ESSENCE**,  
4161 among the things to be explained in the explanation for the existence and  
4162 nature of E1 and continues to state that we can explain the existence and  
4163 nature of E2 because E1 ontologically depends on E2 (Cameron 2022, 100).  
4164 Yet he continues to formulate his argument on the basis of the idea that the  
4165 success of each explanation is hostage to the next explanation, instead of  
4166 dwelling on the circularity.

4167 Besides reiterating the finitist dogma at the level of success of explanations,  
4168 Cameron's argument, if it were sound, could motivate only metaphysical  
4169 infinitists to separate explanations from determination relations. For, the suc-  
4170 cess of explanation was threatened only in the infinitist case. The circularity  
4171 argument, on the other hand, puts significant pressure on the metaphysical  
4172 foundationalist to deny **BACKING**, along with putting some pressure on the  
4173 metaphysical infinitist to do so. In conclusion, although Cameron's argu-  
4174 ment for separating explanations from determination relations fails, a better  
4175 argument to do this job is available to him.\*

---

\* Earlier versions of this essay were presented at the 2022 meeting of the Graduate Philosophy Workshop in Türkiye, the Varieties of Non-wellfoundedness Workshop as part of the Swiss National Science Foundation project *Being without Foundations* organized jointly by the University of Lucerne and the University of Glasgow, and to the Department of Philosophy in Bilkent University. Thanks to those audiences and to Fabrice Correia, Philipp Blum, and Jessica Wilson.

Maşuk Şimşek

 0009-0001-0938-0623

Bilkent University, Ankara

masuk.simsek@bilkent.edu.tr

4176  
4177  
4178  
4179

4180

## References

- 4181 BILLON, Alexandre. 2023. “Are Infinite Explanations Self-Explanatory?” *Erkenntnis*  
4182 88(5): 1935–1954, doi:10.1007/s10670-021-00436-3.
- 4183 BIRD, Alexander. 2005. “Explanation and Metaphysics.” *Synthese* 143(1/2): 89–107,  
4184 doi:10.1007/s11229-005-3115-2.
- 4185 BLISS, Ricki Leigh. 2018. “Grounding and Reflexivity.” in *Reality and its Structure:*  
4186 *Essays in Fundamentality*, edited by Ricki Leigh BLISS and Graham PRIEST, pp.  
4187 70–90. Oxford: Oxford University Press, doi:10.1093/oso/9780198755630.003.0004.
- 4188 BROMBERGER, Sylvain. 1965. “An Approach to Explanation.” in *Analytical Philosophy,*  
4189 *Second Series*, edited by Ronald J. BUTLER, pp. 72–105. Oxford: Basil Blackwell  
4190 Publishers. Reprinted in Bromberger (1992, 18–51).
- 4191 —. 1992. *On What We Know We Don't Know: Explanation, Theory, Linguistics, and How*  
4192 *Questions Shape Them*. Chicago, Illinois: University of Chicago Press.
- 4193 CAMERON, Ross P. 2022. *Chains of Being: Infinite Regress, Circularity, and Metaphysical*  
4194 *Explanation*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, doi:10.1093/oso/9780198854272.00  
4195 1.0001.
- 4196 CARRUTH, Alexander, GIBB, Sophie C. and HEIL, John, eds. 2018. *Ontology, Modality,*  
4197 *and Mind: Themes from the Metaphysics of E.J. Lowe*. Oxford: Oxford University  
4198 Press, doi:10.1093/oso/9780198796299.001.0001.
- 4199 LEWIS, David. 1986. “Causal Explanation.” in *Philosophical Papers, Volume 2*, pp.  
4200 214–240. Oxford: Oxford University Press, doi:10.1093/0195036468.003.0007.
- 4201 LOWE, Edward Jonathan. 2016. “Metafisica como ciencia de la esencia.”  
4202 *Analysis. Claves de Pensamiento Contemporáneo* 19(7). Reprinted as “Metaphysics  
4203 as the Science of Essence” in Carruth, Gibb and Heil (2018, 14–34),  
4204 doi:10.5281/zenodo.1297187.
- 4205 OBERLE, Thomas. 2022. “Grounding, Infinite Regress, and the Thomistic Cosmological  
4206 Argument.” *International Journal for Philosophy of Religion* 92(3): 147–166, doi:10  
4207 .1007/s11153-022-09840-3.

---

Special thanks to Jonathan Payton, whose constructive feedback made this essay possible, and two anonymous referees for this journal. Research for this essay was funded in part by a doctoral scholarship from Bilkent University and in part by a BİDEB scholarship from the Scientific and Research Council of Türkiye.

- 4208 PRUSS, Alexander R. 1998. "The Hume-Edwards Principle and the Cosmological  
4209 Argument." *International Journal for Philosophy of Religion* 43(3): 149–165, doi:[10](https://doi.org/10.1023/a:1003167813221)  
4210 [.1023/a:1003167813221](https://doi.org/10.1023/a:1003167813221).
- 4211 RATNER, Leah W. 2003. *Non-Linear Theory of Elasticity and Optimal Design*. Amster-  
4212 dam: Elsevier Science Publishers B.V., doi:[10.1016/B978-0-444-51427-1.X5000-2](https://doi.org/10.1016/B978-0-444-51427-1.X5000-2).
- 4213 ROWE, William L. 1970. "Two Criticisms of the Cosmological Argument." *The Monist*  
4214 54(3): 441–459, doi:[10.5840/monist197054329](https://doi.org/10.5840/monist197054329).

PROOF

PROOF

4215  
4216  
4217

# Grounding Ground and the (In-)Escapable Ill-Foundedness of the Inclusive ‘Explains’

YANNIC KAPPES

4218 The thesis that every grounding fact is grounded gives rise to an infinite  
4219 series of grounding facts. According to Frugé (“Janus-Faced Grounding”),  
4220 this series of grounds of ground amounts to a vicious regress. This paper  
4221 (1) responds to Frugé’s argument, (2) argues for a more plausible moti-  
4222 vation for the vicious regress, and then (3) deploys a Bolzanian regress  
4223 argument against this to defend the innocence of the series of grounds  
4224 of ground.

4225 Theories according to which every grounding fact is grounded give rise to  
4226 the following kind of infinite series of grounding facts (let ‘<’ express at least  
4227 partial grounding):

4228  $Q$   
4229  $P < Q$   
4230  $\Gamma_1 < (P < Q)$   
4231  $\Gamma_2 < (\Gamma_1 < (P < Q))$   
4232  $\Gamma_3 < (\Gamma_2 < (\Gamma_1 < (P < Q)))$

...

4233 Here, let the  $\Gamma_i$  stand for whatever the grounds of the grounding fact in ques-  
4234 tion are supposed to be: For example, according to Dasgupta (2014), these are  
4235 certain essence facts; Sider (2020) holds that they can be of a more varied na-  
4236 ture, while according to Bennett (2011), deRosset (2013b), and Litland (2017),  
4237 they are the grounds involved in the grounding fact that is being grounded.<sup>1</sup>

---

1 In Litland’s case, this results from *factive* grounding facts being grounded in the grounds involved together with the corresponding *non-factive* grounding facts, which are zero-grounded.

4238 Against these accounts, Frugé (2023) attempts to show that the resulting  
 4239 infinite series of grounds of grounds constitute *vicious* regresses by arguing  
 4240 that they involve a kind of metaphysical dependence that allows to apply an  
 4241 analogue of Schaffer’s (2010, 2016) consideration for the well-foundedness of  
 4242 grounding to the infinite series of grounds of ground. In what follows, I will  
 4243 develop Frugé’s argument, argue against it, and draw a general lesson about  
 4244 the well-foundedness of metaphysical explanation from this discussion.

4245 This is the plan: Section 1 presents Frugé’s argument and argues that it fails.  
 4246 Section 2 discusses a related argument by (1) considerations akin to Frugé’s  
 4247 counterfactual considerations, (2) introducing the inclusive sense of ‘explains’  
 4248 and showing how each element in the series of grounds of ground is explained  
 4249 by its successor in this sense, and (3) arguing that the metaphor of explanation  
 4250 as a machine has a natural reading given which Schaffer’s consideration for  
 4251 the well-foundedness of grounding applies *mutatis mutandis* to the infinite  
 4252 series of grounds of ground.<sup>2</sup> Against these considerations, section 3 fields a  
 4253 regress argument by Bolzano (2014b, para. 199) to argue for the innocence of  
 4254 the series of grounds of ground.<sup>3</sup>

## 4255 1 Frugé’s Argument

4256 In a nutshell, Frugé (2023) argues for the viciousness of the series of grounds of  
 4257 ground by arguing (1) that what he calls a kind of “genuine dependence” holds  
 4258 between  $Q$  and all  $\Gamma_i$  in the series of grounding of ground (see above), and (2)  
 4259 that this allows applying (*mutatis mutandis*) Schaffer’s consideration for the  
 4260 well-foundedness of grounding to reveal the viciousness of the series. I will  
 4261 now introduce the notion of well-foundedness and Schaffer’s consideration  
 4262 for the well-foundedness of grounding, and then we will consider Frugé’s  
 4263 argument in detail.

4264 Proponents of the well-foundedness of grounding reject the existence of  
 4265 infinite regresses (i.e., downwardly non-terminating grounding chains) and  
 4266 circles of grounding, at least as long as the involved facts (or propositions,  
 4267 if you prefer) are not appropriately tethered to the fundamental. An impor-  
 4268 tant metaphorical consideration that motivates well-foundedness stems from

---

2 For the record: My aim is not to endorse Schaffer’s consideration or the well-foundedness of grounding in this paper, but rather to defend the possibility of conjoining them with theories according to which every grounding fact is grounded.

3 In arguing against conceptions of grounds of ground like Dasgupta’s (2014), Bennett (2017, 207) offers a related argument; see footnote 15 below.

4269 Schaffer, according to whom grounding regresses are objectionable because  
 4270 in them, being would be “infinitely deferred [and] never achieved” (Schaffer  
 4271 2010, 62):

4272         Grounding must be well-founded because a grounded entity  
 4273         inherits its reality from its grounds, and where there is inheritance  
 4274         there must be a source. [...] [S]omething cannot be real merely  
 4275         by having a limitless sequence of ancestors, each claiming real-  
 4276         ity from its parents. There must actually be a source of reality  
 4277         somewhere. (Schaffer 2016, 95)

4278 I will call this ‘Schaffer’s consideration’.<sup>4</sup> Before we continue, note that infinite  
 4279 series of grounds of ground are not downwardly non-terminating grounding  
 4280 chains (and thus well-foundedness of grounding is not sufficient to argue  
 4281 against them): no element of these series is *grounded* in the next element.  
 4282 Accordingly, proponents of accounts according to which every grounding fact  
 4283 is grounded have insisted that the resulting infinite series are unproblematic  
 4284 and that we can accept their accounts while remaining neutral on whether  
 4285 grounding is well-founded.

4286         Against this, Frugé (2023, sec. 2) argues that Schaffer’s consideration *can*  
 4287         be extended to the infinite series of grounds of ground once we realize that  $Q$   
 4288         metaphysically depends in a special way on each of the  $\Gamma_i$  (i.e., the grounds  
 4289         of the grounding facts in the infinite series of grounding grounds that starts  
 4290         with  $P < Q$ ). Frugé calls this kind of dependence “connection dependence”  
 4291         and argues as follows:

4292         Why is connection dependence a genuine form of dependence?  
 4293         Suppose the following is the case:  $A$  grounds  $B$ , where  $C$  grounds  
 4294         that  $A$  grounds  $B$ . Then,  $B$  doesn’t only depend on  $A$ . Instead, it  
 4295         also depends on  $C$ , because  $A$  only generates  $B$  given  $C$ . If there  
 4296         were no  $C$  to put  $A$  grounds  $B$  in place, then even if there were  
 4297          $A$  there would be no  $B$ , since  $A$  wouldn’t generate  $B$  because it  
 4298         wouldn’t be the case that  $A$  grounds  $B$ . For example, if a collection  
 4299         of particles ground the composite whole of those particles only  
 4300         via a composition operation grounding this grounding fact, then  
 4301         if, perhaps counterpossibly, there were no composition operation

---

4 While I focus on Schaffer’s consideration here, other arguments for the well-foundedness of grounding exist. An example of an argument meant to establish an aspect of well-foundedness is Kovacs’ (2018) argument in favor of the irreflexivity of grounding.

4302 then those particles would not ground that whole, because there  
 4303 would be no composition. (Frugé 2023, 976–977)

4304 Having thus argued that  $Q$  metaphysically depends on  $\Gamma_1$  in some genuine  
 4305 sense, he extends the argument to the rest of the  $\Gamma_i$ :

4306 Similar reasoning applies at each step in the stepwise path. If  $D$   
 4307 grounds that  $C$  grounds  $A$  grounds  $B$ , then if there were no  $D$ , then  
 4308 even if there were  $C$  and  $A$ , then there would be no  $B$  because  $C$   
 4309 would not generate that  $A$  grounds  $B$ , and so  $A$  would not generate  
 4310  $B$ . And so on for each ground in the stepwise grounding path [i.e.,  
 4311 in our terminology, the  $\Gamma_i$ ]. Thus, connection dependence is a  
 4312 genuine form of dependence.  $B$  needs  $C$  in order to come about,  
 4313 and it also needs  $D$  in order to come about, and so on down the  
 4314 stepwise path. So  $B$  metaphysically requires each ground in its  
 4315 stepwise grounding path. (Frugé 2023, 977)<sup>5</sup>

4316 Frugé then argues that (an analogue of) Schaffer’s consideration applies:

4317 As Jonathan Schaffer says in the context of defending well-  
 4318 foundedness, if grounding did not terminate in an ungrounded  
 4319 ground, then “being would be infinitely deferred, never achieved”  
 4320 (2010: 62). But given connection dependence, then the same can  
 4321 be said for an infinite stepwise path of ever more grounding of  
 4322 grounding facts [i.e., series of ground of ground]. Even if ground  
 4323 were well-founded, if the grounding of grounding facts had no  
 4324 end, then ‘being would be infinitely deferred, never achieved’,  
 4325 since there would be no point at which it’s ultimately settled  
 4326 that the grounded is generated. It would always need a further  
 4327 ground of a grounding fact. Therefore, if one thinks that violating  
 4328 the well-foundedness of ground is vicious, then one should also  
 4329 think that the fact regress is vicious—given that the grounded  
 4330 depends not just on its grounds but also on the grounds of its

5 Bennett (2017, 207) argues that whatever grounds  $P$ ’s grounding  $Q$  should also ground  $P$ . By considering grounding instead of “genuine metaphysical dependence,” Frugé’s counterfactual consideration can be understood as an argument for a generalization of this thesis. But as the discussion below suggests, there threatens to be an analogous consideration establishing that in addition to being grounded in  $P$  and the ground  $\Gamma_1$  of  $P < Q$ ,  $Q$  is also grounded in  $P < Q$ . While I am not sure what to think about Bennett’s metaphorical consideration for her thesis, she rejects the latter result. See also footnote 15 below.



4331 grounding facts, and, more generally, on the grounds in its entire  
4332 stepwise path of grounding facts. (Frugé 2023, 978)

4333 Now, I believe Frugé’s argument misses its mark: Even if we set all worries  
4334 about his counterfactual argument aside and simply grant that  $Q$  depends  
4335 in some genuine metaphysical sense on all of the  $\Gamma_i$ —in fact, we can even  
4336 assume this relation to be grounding itself—it is hard to see how Schaffer’s  
4337 consideration *could* apply. For the structure of connection dependence that  
4338 Frugé assumes is not even an infinitely descending chain down which “being  
4339 could be infinitely deferred,” but rather that of an infinite collection of  $\Gamma_i$ , on  
4340 each of which  $Q$  depends, but which do not stand themselves in relations of  
4341 metaphysical priority.

4342 Since the structure of metaphysical priority that would seem to be required  
4343 for Schaffer’s consideration to apply is indeed that of an infinitely descending  
4344 (and non-tethered) chain of dependence, one would have expected Frugé to  
4345 argue that the elements of the series of ground of ground (i.e., those at the  
4346 beginning of this paper) stand in a relation of metaphysical priority, but he  
4347 does not do so. To an extent, this problem is perhaps obfuscated by Frugé’s  
4348 talk of “ $B$  metaphysically [requiring] each ground in its stepwise grounding  
4349 path,” which might suggest that this path consists in a chain of connection  
4350 dependence holding between the elements of the series of grounds of ground  
4351 (rather than the  $\Gamma_i$ ), but this is not the case.

4352 Additionally, Frugé seems to take issue with there seemingly being an  
4353 infinity of  $\Gamma_i$  on which  $Q$  is connection dependent (e.g., “It would always need  
4354 a further ground of a grounding fact.”). But first, it is not easy to see what is  
4355 supposed to be objectionable about this (many facts are only fully grounded  
4356 in infinitely many facts taken together), and second, the assumption does not  
4357 even follow, as the available accounts of the grounds of ground demonstrate:  
4358 For example, on the Bennett-deRosset view, all  $\Gamma_i$  are identical to the original  
4359 ground of  $Q$ , i.e.,  $P$  in our case.

4360 While I thus conclude that Frugé’s argument fails, I will now show how  
4361 one might attempt to substantiate in a different way the idea that series of  
4362 ground of ground involve a relation of productive metaphysical priority that  
4363 allows an analogue of Schaffer’s consideration to apply and show the regress  
4364 to be vicious.

## 2 Three Better Considerations?

Let us discuss three considerations in favor of the thesis that the elements of the series of ground of ground stand in a relation of metaphysical priority (grounding or other) to which Schaffer's consideration applies. While I ultimately reject these considerations, I believe that they (or something close enough) are plausibly what motivates uneasiness about the series of grounds of ground.

### 2.1 Counterfactual Considerations

It may be tempting to think that a case can be made for the claim that each element of the series of grounds of ground counterfactually depends on its successor. For example, one might think that had  $P < Q$  not been the case (and  $Q$  not been overdetermined by having a distinct further ground besides  $P$ ), then  $Q$  would not have been the case. Moreover, one might even think that (counterpossibly) if  $P$  had been the case but  $P < Q$  had not also been the case, then  $Q$  would still not have been the case. But while this is plausible for *some* instances, even setting overdetermination aside, counterexamples abound: For example, assuming  $P < P \vee Q$ , it is not in general the case that had  $P < P \vee Q$  not been the case, then  $P \vee Q$  would not have been the case: Even if  $P \vee Q$  is not overdetermined (because only  $P$  is true but not  $Q$ ), it might still be the case that if  $P$  had been false, then  $Q$  would have been true (and hence  $P \vee Q$  too).<sup>6</sup> What is more, even if all such cases could somehow be excluded, counterfactuals do simply not map onto relations of metaphysical priority (at least not in the required way): For example, had  $T(P)$  not been the case (let ' $T()$ ' be the truth operator), then  $P$  would not have been the case either; if anything,  $P$  has metaphysical priority over  $T(P)$ .

Now, rather than getting bogged down in thinking about counterfactuals further, let us consider two further attempts to argue that there is a relation of productive metaphysical priority (to which Schaffer's consideration applies) that holds between the elements of the series of grounds of ground—staying neutral for now on the question whether this alleged priority relation would be grounding or not; let us call it 'gog-priority'. The first attempt stems from an inclusive sense of 'explains' and the second from a particular reading of the metaphor of the machine.

---

<sup>6</sup> Many thanks to the editors and an anonymous referee for discussion here.

## 2.2 The Inclusive Sense of ‘Explains’

I assume that explanation why has the following tripartite structure (see, for example, [Schaffer 2017](#)):

BASE. A set of reasons why the explanandum obtains, e.g., causes or grounds.

LINK. An explanatory connection between the reasons in the base and the explanandum; these could either be instances of explanatory relations such as causation or grounding (call these ‘type 1’) or explanatory generalizations such as laws of nature or metaphysics, (explanatory) schemata, or (explanatory) inference rules (call these ‘type 2’).

EXPLANANDUM. That which is being explained.

For an example, consider an explanation why a certain rose is red (**EXPLANANDUM**) in terms of its being scarlet (a ground that constitutes the explanation’s **BASE**) and the grounding fact of the rose’s being scarlet grounding it’s being red (or a metaphysical principle that states that instantiations of determinates ground instantiations of corresponding determinables).

In a restrictive sense, only the elements of the **BASE** explain the **EXPLANANDUM**—the rose’s being red is explained by its being scarlet, while the grounding claim or metaphysical principle plays a different (for example, explanation-backing) role. It is this restrictive sense that corresponds to ‘because’, which connects a sentence that expresses a reason why with a sentence that expresses an **EXPLANANDUM** (cf. [Schnieder 2010](#); and [Skow 2016](#)).

But there also exists another sense of ‘explains’, in which links also (partially) explain their explananda. In this sense, the rose’s being red is explained by it’s being scarlet and the corresponding grounding fact of metaphysical principle together: **BASE** and **LINK(s)** together explain<sup>inclusive</sup> the **EXPLANANDUM**. This sense is, for example, operative in how the DN-model of explanation is often framed: Boundary conditions and laws (or lawlike generalizations) together form the explanans, and the explanans (or what is contained therein) explains the **EXPLANANDUM** (in the inclusive sense).

Equipped with this inclusive sense of ‘explains’ and assuming that instances of grounding correspond to instances of explanation, we can observe that the

4431 elements of the series of grounds of ground are (partially) explained<sub>inclusive</sub>  
 4432 by their successor, which is a type 1 LINK of a grounding explanation of its  
 4433 precursor. For example,  $\Gamma_1$  is a ground of  $P < Q$ , and  $\Gamma_1 < (P < Q)$  is a  
 4434 LINK of the corresponding grounding explanation. Therefore,  $P < Q$  not  
 4435 only counterfactually depends on  $\Gamma_1 < (P < Q)$  but is moreover partially  
 4436 explained<sub>inclusive</sub> by it.<sup>7</sup>

4437 Hence, if there are series of grounds of ground, then the inclusive ‘explains’  
 4438 allows for infinitely descending chains. Moreover, ‘explains<sub>inclusive</sub>’ would  
 4439 presumably not be well-founded in the sense that any explained<sub>inclusive</sub> fact  
 4440 is ultimately explained<sub>inclusive</sub> by unexplained<sub>inclusive</sub> facts.<sup>8</sup> For consider a  
 4441 series of grounds of ground: Perhaps all elements could have a fundamental  
 4442 ground outside the series, but then the involved grounding relations give rise  
 4443 to further series (assuming that all instances of grounding are grounded, of  
 4444 course), and so on.<sup>9</sup>

4445 Now, given the inclusive sense of ‘explains’ and the fact that the explanation  
 4446 in question is a metaphysical one, *some* metaphysical explanatory relation  
 4447 (i.e., a relation that can be called such in some good sense) holds between  
 4448 the elements of the series of grounds of ground. Together with the previous  
 4449 counterfactual observation, this could lead one to think that the relation in  
 4450 question is a relation of productive metaphysical priority, i.e., gog-priority.  
 4451 Assuming further that all such priority relations are subject to a variant of  
 4452 Schaffer’s consideration, the viciousness of the series of grounds of ground  
 4453 would then follow.

### 2.3 Metaphor of the Machine

4455 Indeed, I believe that there is something of a sense that Schaffer’s considera-  
 4456 tion or a variant of it applies to gog-priority (if it applies at all) and that this  
 4457 can be brought out by a particular, yet arguably natural, way of construing  
 4458 the metaphor of grounding (or explanation) as a machine (cf. Litland 2017):

7 This consideration relies on there being type 1 LINKS rather than only LINKS of type 2; see the next subsection for discussion.

8 Even focusing exclusively on metaphysical explanation. The non-well-foundedness of explanation in general can arguably already be established on the basis of the non-well-foundedness of causation; cf. Schaffer (2016). This incidentally puts pressure on Frugé’s (2023, 975) claim that “for any explanation both explainers and explanations must come to an end.”

9 For a different kind of argument in favor of the thesis that the inclusive ‘explains’ (even restricted to metaphysical explanation) is not well-founded, see Hicks (2020) and Kappes (2022).

4459 Think of grounding (or explanation) as a machine: Instances of  
4460 grounding are machines that take inputs (grounds) and use them  
4461 to generate outputs (groundees). But for a machine to be able to  
4462 generate something, it either has to exist without having been gen-  
4463 erated, or it has to be generated first. But this means that the series  
4464 of grounds of ground corresponds to a series of machines, each  
4465 generated by a previous machine, and so on *ad infinitum*. It seems  
4466 like each machine inherits its reality from a further machine that  
4467 generates it, and thus its reality is infinitely deferred and never  
4468 achieved.<sup>10</sup>

4469 Now, this understanding of the metaphor of the machine is not mandatory.  
4470 First, it is just not clear why the causal-temporal relation between the machine  
4471 and its output within the metaphor should have an analogue in a relation  
4472 of productive metaphysical priority within reality: after all, metaphors break  
4473 down somewhere, and this might well be where this one does.<sup>11</sup>

4474 Second, as one of the anonymous referees for this paper has thankfully  
4475 pointed out, if we assume explanatory LINKS only to be of type 2, that is,  
4476 explanatory inference rules (as, e.g., Litland does) or certain laws (as, e.g.,  
4477 Schaffer does), rather than instances of grounding, we should presumably  
4478 understand the metaphor as involving these rules or laws as their machines.  
4479 But since, e.g., in Litland's case, roughly speaking, a general rule for grounding  
4480 introduction is sufficient to generate all statements of higher order ground,  
4481 no hierarchy of ever-descending explanatory machines is required. As the  
4482 referee has pointed out, moreover, these accounts can avoid the regress of in-  
4483 clusive explanation: Roughly, in a case of *P* grounding *Q*, *Q* will be inclusively  
4484 explained by *P* together with a metaphysical law or a statement concerning  
4485 the validity of the relevant rule of explanatory inference (i.e., one linking  
4486 *P* and *Q*), plus the law or statement concerning the validity of the rule that  
4487 governs what grounds grounding facts. While this does not get rid of the  
4488 corresponding infinite series of grounding facts, it does avoid any regress of  
4489 inclusive explanation.

4490 Now, while I find this very compelling, my aim in this section was to attempt  
4491 to come up with possible reasons that could be what motivates uneasiness  
4492 concerning the series of grounds of ground, and this I believe the above

---

10 Something like this *might* also underlie Frugé's (2023) temporal analogy.

11 Proponents of the well-foundedness of grounding who, like Schaffer, believe that causation is not well-founded have a further compelling reason for this.

4493 version of the metaphor of the machine achieves even in the light of the  
4494 previous paragraph.

## 2024 *Taking Stock*

4496 The series of grounds of ground has been considered unproblematic by those  
4497 committed to it (cf. [Bennett 2011](#); [deRosset 2013a](#); [Dasgupta 2014](#); [Litland](#)  
4498 [2017](#)). For one, it is not an infinitely descending series of grounds and not  
4499 obviously problematic in any other way. But more importantly, its proponents  
4500 assume there to be a strong theoretical reason to allow for it: otherwise, it  
4501 seems there must be at least some ungrounded grounding facts. But together  
4502 with a principle of purity of the fundamental, this leads to the result that  
4503 every entity (and other constituent of facts) is fundamental.<sup>12</sup>

4504 Above, I have developed potential reasons in favor of the claim that the  
4505 elements of the series of grounds of ground stand in a relation of gog-priority  
4506 such that an application of Schaffer's consideration reveals the series to be  
4507 objectionable. Though I ultimately reject these reasons, I take them to (1)  
4508 provide a plausible diagnosis for the uneasiness concerning the series of  
4509 grounds of ground that one occasionally encounters outside of print and  
4510 which is likely shared by Frugé, and (2) substantiate this uneasiness to a point  
4511 that is worth further engaging with.

4512 While I have already mentioned some possible objections above, I will now  
4513 argue that gog-priority runs into a version of Bolzano's regress.

## 4513 **With Bolzano against Gog-Priority**

4515 Let us suppose for the sake of argument that grounding is well-founded  
4516 and that at least part of what reveals this is Schaffer's consideration. Given  
4517 these assumptions, let us turn to gog-priority and see whether it is a notion  
4518 to which an analogue of Schaffer's consideration applies (given the above  
4519 considerations that motivated considering gog-priority as a genuine kind of  
4520 metaphysical priority in the first place).

4521 Now, either gog-priority just is grounding too or it is not: In the former  
4522 case, insofar as Schaffer's consideration applies to grounding, so does it to gog-  
4523 priority, because the latter just is (a subcase of) grounding. In that case, the

---

12 But see [Correia \(2023\)](#) and [Barker \(2023\)](#) for some challenges to purity, and [Frugé \(2023\)](#) for a non-trivial conception of fundamentality that allows for ungrounded grounding facts.

4524 series of grounds of ground would constitute a vicious regress. Alternatively,  
 4525 gog-priority is a *sui generis* metaphysical priority relation besides grounding,  
 4526 for which we want to investigate whether Schaffer's consideration applies  
 4527 or not. Therefore, let us first consider whether gog-dependence could be  
 4528 grounding and then generalize our argument.

### 3<sub>20</sub>1 *Could Gog-Priority Be Grounding?*

4530 I argue that in this case, grounding facts are not fully grounded in their conven-  
 4531 tional grounds (the non-gog-priority grounds), and at least the corresponding  
 4532 higher-order grounding facts (which are gog-priority grounds) must be added.  
 4533 For example,  $P < Q$  will not be fully grounded in its conventional grounds  $\Gamma_1$ ;  
 4534 rather, it would at least require  $\Gamma_1 < (P < Q)$  too. This can be brought out by  
 4535 reflection on the metaphor of the machine as construed in the previous sec-  
 4536 tion (relying on this construal of the metaphor seems dialectically appropriate  
 4537 since I have diagnosed it as underlying the idea that gog-priority exists as a  
 4538 genuine relation of metaphysical priority subject to Schaffer's consideration).

4539 On this understanding, both the input of the machine and the machine  
 4540 (i.e., the grounding fact) ground the output. In a way, the causal relations that  
 4541 hold within the fiction of the metaphor between the input and the output as  
 4542 well as the machine and the output stand, on this view, simply for grounding.  
 4543 But again, within the metaphor, input and machine can cause the output only  
 4544 together. Therefore, on this understanding, it would seem that the metaphor  
 4545 suggests that  $\Gamma_1$  and  $\Gamma_1 < (P < Q)$  somehow ground  $P < Q$  together, neither  
 4546 on its own sufficient as a full ground. Additionally, if we assume otherwise,  
 4547 it would seem that applying Schaffer's consideration would not get us the  
 4548 right result: something that has a full fundamental ground (as  $P < Q$  would  
 4549 have via its ordinary ground  $\Gamma_1$ ) surely has "achieved being"; there being an  
 4550 infinitely descending chain of further grounds would not seem to detract from  
 4551 this.<sup>13</sup>

4552 Now, to simplify, we write ' $P$ ' for ' $\Gamma_1$ ' and ' $Q$ ' for ' $P < Q$ ' (but also consider  
 4553 that if the full grounds of all grounding facts must contain something like  
 4554  $\Gamma_1 < (P < Q)$ , then it seems plausible that something analogous holds for all  
 4555 cases of grounding). On the first level, we thus have (let ' $<$ ' express at least

---

13 Granted, lest a further problem of reality achieving happen somewhere along that infinitely descending chain, all of its elements must be fully grounded in something fundamental.

4556 partial ground):

$$P, (P < Q) < Q$$

4557 Here is the crux: If  $P$  can only ground  $Q$  together with help from  $P < Q$ , it  
 4558 would also seem that  $P, (P < Q)$  cannot fully ground  $Q$  alone! Rather, it seems  
 4559 that they too would need help, namely, from  $P, (P < Q) < Q$ . At least, the  
 4560 alternative seems objectionably ad hoc: If  $P < Q$  is indeed a ground, how  
 4561 come  $P, (P < Q)$  can fully ground  $Q$ , while  $P$  cannot?

4562 This result (i.e., that  $P, (P < Q)$  cannot be a full ground of  $Q$  because  
 4563 it does not contain a [LINK](#)-like element that takes us from  $P, (P < Q)$  to  
 4564  $Q$ ) can be supported by at least one of the considerations that originally  
 4565 motivated that there is something problematic about the series of grounds  
 4566 of ground: Within the metaphor of the machine construed as above, input  
 4567 and machine together *cause* the output. According to my diagnosis, this is  
 4568 what underlies the idea that the relation of gog-priority (which we have here  
 4569 identified with grounding) holds between  $P < Q$  and  $Q$ . But then it seems  
 4570 that we should be able to apply the metaphor to  $P, (P < Q) < Q$  too: This  
 4571 instance of grounding corresponds to a machine that takes  $P$  and the original  
 4572 machine (corresponding to  $P < Q$ ) as inputs and gives out  $Q$ . But then the  
 4573 current understanding of the metaphor delivers that  $Q$  is also at least partially  
 4574 grounded in  $P, (P < Q) < Q$ , we can apply the metaphor again, and so on!

4575 Now, if what I have just said is correct, then we run into a version of  
 4576 Bolzano's (2014a, para. 199; cf. Rusnock and George 2014) regress:

$$P < Q$$

$$P, (P < Q) < Q$$

$$P, (P < Q), (P, (P < Q) < Q) < Q$$

...

4580 Bolzano outright rejects (his version of) this series as incoherent, but he  
 4581 does not provide an argument. I submit that there is at least some intuitive  
 4582 strangeness to this series, and while this might not be a particularly strong  
 4583 reason in general, it may have more bite in the present context where we  
 4584 argued against a position itself to a good part motivated by similar intuitions.<sup>14</sup>

14 Perhaps it could be possible to tell a story that actually supports the innocuousness of Bolzano's series by developing the idea that the new partial ground that is added at every step in the series somehow builds upon the previous partial grounds, thus getting us closer and closer to  $Q$  and reaching it at the limit? Thus understood,  $P$  gets us to some extent to  $Q$ , its getting us there to some extent gets us a little further, and so forth, until at the limit, we reach  $Q$ .



4585 Now, for our opponent, who set out to avoid an allegedly problematic  
 4586 infinite series, the situation is already somewhat awkward, but could they  
 4587 perhaps bite the bullet and declare the plurality of all the grounds constructed  
 4588 above to be a full ground  $\Omega$  of  $Q$ ? I do not think so because, presumably, we  
 4589 should apply the crux argument to  $\Omega$  too. But by doing so, we seem to reveal  
 4590 that  $\Omega$  cannot be a full ground of  $Q$  either: in  $\Omega$ , there is no grounding fact that  
 4591 takes us from all the grounds in  $\Omega$  to  $Q$ ! Yet, as I have argued above, this is what  
 4592 the above construal of the metaphor of the machine would require: Within  
 4593 the metaphor, the machine that takes  $\Omega$  as input and gives out  $Q$ —it causes  
 4594  $Q$  together with the  $\Omega$ . But since causation is the metaphorical analogue of  
 4595 grounding here, the grounding fact that takes us from the  $\Omega$  to  $Q$  would have  
 4596 to be included in a full ground of  $Q$ —yet, it is not among the  $\Omega$ !

4597 One might now consider whether a full ground of  $Q$  could be obtained from  
 4598  $\Omega$  by some transfinite construction similar to how  $\Omega$  was constructed, but as  
 4599 long as the result is such that we can say something that amounts to those  
 4600 grounds (i.e., those resulting from the construction) grounding  $Q$ , it looks  
 4601 like we can apply the crux and obtain a further grounding fact that should  
 4602 be part of the full ground but was not constructed. Thus, unless declaring  
 4603 full grounds to be ineffable and giving up talking about them like above is  
 4604 considered an option, I conclude that Bolzano's regress must be avoided.

4605 In this subsection, I have argued that given (1) the motivation (from the  
 4606 previous section) for gog-priority being a genuine kind of metaphysical priority  
 4607 to which Schaffer's consideration applies and (2) the assumption that gog-  
 4608 priority just is grounding, Bolzano's regress arises. Since Bolzano's regress  
 4609 must be avoided, (1) is undermined given (2). Next, we will drop assumption  
 4610 (2) and argue that a Bolzaniian regress arises (and hence (1) is undermined  
 4611 even if gog-priority is not grounding).<sup>15</sup>

---

15 Mentioning Carroll's related regress, Bennett (2017, 207) offers a similar argument against theories like Dasgupta's, according to which grounding facts are grounded in principles that connect grounds with groundee. Her argument relies on the claim that whatever grounds a grounding fact  $\Gamma < Q$  must also ground  $Q$  (for a (pre-emptive) response to Bennett's regress, see Dasgupta 2014, 587–589). While I cannot assess Bennett's metaphorical consideration for that claim here, a likely upshot of our present discussion is that it must not generalize to the grounding facts themselves: Claiming that  $\Gamma < Q$  must be a ground of  $Q$  is what gets our regress argument going.

### 3.2 Suppose Gog-Priority Is Not Grounding

4613 To round off the argument, assume now that gog-priority is *not* grounding  
 4614 but some *sui generis* kind of metaphysical priority relation. Suppose  $Q$  is fully  
 4615 grounded in a fundamental fact  $P$  and gog-posterior to  $P < Q$  (i.e.,  $P$ 's fully  
 4616 grounding  $Q$  is gog-prior to  $Q$ ). Let us consider how Schaffer's considera-  
 4617 tion might apply in this situation: Suppose first that something can "achieve  
 4618 reality" already by being fully grounded in something fundamental. Then  
 4619 that thing's *additionally* being located at the top of an infinitely descending,  
 4620 non-terminating chain of gog-priority would not seem to impact  $Q$ 's being  
 4621 real— $Q$  would have already "achieved reality" by being fully grounded in  
 4622 something fundamental.

4623 Therefore, it seems our opponent should rather hold that neither only  
 4624 something's being *grounded* in something fundamental nor only its being gog-  
 4625 posterior to something fundamental can be sufficient for the thing's having  
 4626 achieved reality, or (we might say) "having been made real." In our example  
 4627 case, this means that while  $P$  fully grounds  $Q$  and  $Q$  is gog-posterior to  $P < Q$ ,  
 4628 neither  $P$  nor  $P < Q$  on its own is sufficient to make  $Q$  real. Rather,  $P$  and  
 4629  $P < Q$  only make  $Q$  real together.

4630 Now, whatever this relation of real-making would be (perhaps it could just  
 4631 be the disjunction of grounding and gog-priority?), it looks like the opponent  
 4632 of the series of grounds of ground must hold that an analogue of Schaffer's  
 4633 consideration applies to *it*, and hence that for something to be real, it must  
 4634 either not be made real by anything or be fully made real by some things that  
 4635 are not made real by anything.

4636 But then it seems like we can run the crux argument with real-making  
 4637 instead of grounding and thus construct the Bolzanian regress for this relation  
 4638 of real-making: If  $P$  can only make  $Q$  real together with help from  $P < Q$ , why  
 4639 believe that  $P$ , ( $P < Q$ ) can fully make  $Q$  real on their own? It would seem  
 4640 that they also need help, namely, from some fact concerning  $P$  and  $P < Q$ 's  
 4641 (partially) making  $Q$  real. At least, the alternative seems ad hoc: If  $P < Q$   
 4642 indeed (partially) makes  $Q$  real, how come  $P$  and ( $P < Q$ ) together can fully  
 4643 make  $Q$  real, while  $P$  alone cannot?

4644 It seems that the reasons our opponent has to believe that  $P$  can make  $Q$   
 4645 real only together with  $P < Q$  seem to carry over to  $P$ 's and  $P < Q$ 's together  
 4646 making  $Q$  real: Consider once the metaphor of the machine as construed  
 4647 above, within which input and machine together *cause* the output. This causal

4648 relation is the metaphorical equivalent of the relation of real-making that we  
4649 are currently considering.

4650 But then our opponent would have to produce a good reason to stop the  
4651 metaphor thus understood from applying to real-making as well: Like ground-  
4652 ing, real-making can metaphorically appear as a machine that takes inputs  
4653 (the “real-makers”) and puts out real things. But why would the metaphorical  
4654 parallel between causation and grounding in the original (stretched) metaphor  
4655 then not have its equivalent here? If our opponent cannot produce a good  
4656 answer, it would seem that  $P$ 's and  $P < Q$ 's making  $Q$  real itself would have  
4657 to be a real-maker of  $Q$ , and by similar reasoning to what we used above in  
4658 the case of grounding, it would then seem that  $P$  and  $P < Q$  alone cannot  
4659 fully make  $Q$  real. Rather, they would at least have to be accompanied by *their*  
4660 making  $Q$  real, thereby starting the Bolzanian regress for real-making.

4661 Again, one might criticize this argument for its dependence on an intuitive  
4662 assessment of a particular understanding of the metaphor of the machine.  
4663 But consider the dialectical situation once more: This is the very kind of con-  
4664 sideration that, according to my diagnosis in section 2, underlies the idea that  
4665 the series of grounds of ground is problematic. Thus, at least unless the oppo-  
4666 nent of the series of grounds of ground comes up with a different argument,  
4667 they are confronted with the Bolzanian regress whether they understand  
4668 gog-priority as grounding or as a *sui generis* relation of metaphysical priority.


#### 4664 4 Conclusion

4670 Let us recapitulate: Section 1 argued against Frugé's argument for the vi-  
4671 ciousness of the series of ground of ground: Even if his notion of connection  
4672 dependence corresponds to a genuine form of metaphysical priority, the re-  
4673 sulting structure does not allow for an application of Schaffer's consideration  
4674 to the series of ground of ground.

4675 Section 2 discussed three related considerations in favor of the thesis that a  
4676 well-founded relation of metaphysical priority holds between the elements  
4677 of the series of ground of ground. These concerned certain counterfactuals,  
4678 the inclusive sense of ‘explains’, and a natural reading of the metaphor of  
4679 explanation as a machine. While I ultimately argued that we should not  
4680 endorse these three considerations, I suggested that we should take them  
4681 seriously as likely underlying the claim that the series of ground of ground is  
4682 vicious.

4683 Finally, in section 3 I argued that endorsing the viciousness of the series  
 4684 of ground of ground based on the considerations identified in the previous  
 4685 section runs into a variant of Bolzano's regress. Hence, we should reject the  
 4686 problematic considerations and can maintain the innocence of the series of  
 4687 ground of ground.\*

4688 Yannic Kappes

4689  0000-0002-8065-2935

4690 University of Vienna

4691 yannic.kappes@univie.ac.at

## 4692 References

- 4693 BARKER, Jonathan. 2023. "Against Purity." *Ergo* 9(50): 1381–1409, doi:10.3998/ergo.2  
 4694 919.
- 4695 BENNETT, Karen. 2011. "By Our Bootstraps." in *Philosophical Perspectives 25: Meta-*  
 4696 *physics*, edited by John HAWTHORNE, pp. 27–41. Hoboken, New Jersey: John Wiley  
 4697 and Sons, Inc., doi:10.1111/j.1520-8583.2011.00207.x.
- 4698 —. 2017. *Making Things Up*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, doi:10.1093/oso/978019  
 4699 9682683.001.0001.
- 4700 BOLZANO, Bernard. 2014a. *Theory of Science. Volume 1*. Oxford: Oxford University  
 4701 Press. Translated by Paul Rusnock and Rolf George, doi:10.1093/actrade/978019  
 4702 9684397.book.1.
- 4703 —. 2014b. *Theory of Science. Volume 2*. Oxford: Oxford University Press. Translated by  
 4704 Paul Rusnock and Rolf George, doi:10.1093/actrade/9780199684403.book.1.
- 4705 CORREIA, Fabrice. 2023. "A New Argument for the Groundedness of Grounding Facts."  
 4706 *Erkenntnis* 88(4): 1577–1592, doi:10.1007/s10670-021-00416-7.
- 4707 DASGUPTA, Shamik. 2014. "The Possibility of Physicalism." *The Journal of Philosophy*  
 4708 111(9/10): 557–592, doi:10.5840/jphil20141119/1037.
- 4709 DEROSSET, Louis. 2013a. "Grounding Explanations." *Philosophers' Imprint* 13(7), <http://hdl.handle.net/2027/spo.3521354.0013.007>.
- 4710 —. 2013b. "No Free Lunch." in *Varieties of Dependence: Ontological Dependence, Su-*  
 4711 *pervenience, and Response-Dependence*, edited by Miguel HOELTJE, Benjamin Se-  
 4712 *bastian SCHNIEDER, and Alexander STEINBERG*, pp. 243–270. Basic Philosophical  
 4713 Concepts. München: Philosophia Verlag, doi:10.2307/j.ctv2nrzhj9.11.

---

\* Many thanks to Philipp Blum, Fabrice Correia, Stephan Leuenberger, Steph Rennick, and two anonymous referees for this journal, as well as the organizers and audience of the 2022 *Varieties of Non-Wellfoundedness Workshop* in Ligerz for very valuable comments and suggestions for improvements! I also thank the Deutsche Forschungsgemeinschaft for funding work on this paper through the project *The Structure of Fundamentality* (Grant No. SCHN 1137/5-1).

- 4715 FRUGÉ, Christopher. 2023. “Janus-Faced Grounding.” *Ergo* 10(34): 968–991, doi:10.3  
4716 998/ergo.4664.
- 4717 HICKS, Michael Townsen. 2020. “Breaking the Explanatory Circle.” *Philosophical*  
4718 *Studies* 178(2): 533–557, doi:10.1007/s11098-020-01444-9.
- 4719 KAPPES, Yannic. 2022. “Self-Explanation and Empty-Base Explanation.” *Journal of the*  
4720 *American Philosophical Association* 8(3): 436–453, doi:10.1017/apa.2021.8.
- 4721 KOVACS, David Mark. 2018. “What is Wrong with Self-Grounding?” *Erkenntnis* 83(6):  
4722 1157–1180, doi:10.1007/s10670-017-9934-y.
- 4723 LITLAND, Jon Erling. 2017. “Grounding Ground.” in *Oxford Studies in Metaphysics*,  
4724 volume X, edited by Karen BENNETT and Dean W. ZIMMERMAN, pp. 279–316. New  
4725 York: Oxford University Press, doi:10.1093/acprof:oso/9780198791973.003.0012.
- 4726 RUSNOCK, Paul and GEORGE, Rolf. 2014. “Introduction to Volume Two.” in *Theory of*  
4727 *Science. Volume 2*, pp. xv–liv. Oxford: Oxford University Press. Translated by Paul  
4728 Rusnock and Rolf George, doi:10.1093/acprof:oso/9780199684403.book.1.
- 4729 SCHAFFER, Jonathan. 2010. “Monism: The Priority of the Whole.” *The Philosophical*  
4730 *Review* 119(1): 31–76, doi:10.1215/00318108-2009-025.
- 4731 —. 2016. “Grounding in the Image of Causation.” *Philosophical Studies* 173(1): 49–100,  
4732 doi:10.1007/s11098-014-0438-1.
- 4733 —. 2017. “The Ground Between the Gaps.” *Philosophers’ Imprint* 17(11), [http://hdl.ha  
4734 ndle.net/2027/spo.3521354.0017.011](http://hdl.handle.net/2027/spo.3521354.0017.011).
- 4735 SCHNIEDER, Benjamin Sebastian. 2010. “A Puzzle about ‘Because.’” *Logique et Analyse*  
4736 53(211): 317–343, [https://logiqueetanalyse.be/archive/issues87-220/LA211/04sc  
4737 hnieder.pdf](https://logiqueetanalyse.be/archive/issues87-220/LA211/04schneider.pdf).
- 4738 SIDER, Theodore. 2020. “Ground Grounded.” *Philosophical Studies* 177(3): 747–767,  
4739 doi:10.1007/s11098-018-1204-6.
- 4740 SKOW, Bradford. 2016. *Reasons Why*. New York: Oxford University Press, doi:10.1093/  
4741 acprof:oso/9780198785842.001.0001.

PROOF

4742

Published by *Philosophie.ch*

4743

Verein philosophie.ch

4744

Fabrikgässli 1

4745

2502 Biel/Bienne

4746

Switzerland

4747

[dialectica@philosophie.ch](mailto:dialectica@philosophie.ch)

4748

<https://dialectica.philosophie.ch/>

4749

ISSN 0012-2017

4750

ISBN 1234-5678

4751

This work is licensed under a [Creative Commons Attribution 4.0 International License](https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by/4.0/).

4752

4753

*Dialectica* is supported by the [Swiss Academy of Humanities and Social Sciences](https://www.snf.ch/).

4754

4755

#### Abstracting and Indexing Services

4756

The journal is indexed by the Arts and Humanities Citation Index, Current Contents, Current Mathematical Publications, Dietrich's Index

4757

Philosophicus, IBZ — Internationale Bibliographie der Geistes- und

4758

Sozialwissenschaftlichen Zeitschriftenliteratur, Internationale Bibliographie der Rezensionen Geistes- und Sozialwissenschaftlicher Literatur, Linguistics

4760

and Language Behavior Abstracts, Mathematical Reviews, MathSciNet,

4761

Periodicals Contents Index, Philosopher's Index, Repertoire Bibliographique de la Philosophie, Russian Academy of Sciences Bibliographies.

4762

4763

# Contents

4764

4765	STEPHAN LEUENBERGER, <i>Circular Paths and Infinite Descent: A Guide</i> . . . . .	385
4766	FREDERIQUE JANSSEN-LAURET, <i>Susan Stebbing on Well-Foundedness</i> . . . . .	407
4767	DONNCHADH O'CONNELL & OLLEY PEARSON, <i>Infinite Regresses, Ground</i>	
4768	<i>Conditions &amp; Metaphysical Satisfaction</i> . . . . .	439
4769	ALEXANDRE BILLON, <i>A Recipe for Non-wellfounded but Complete Chains</i>	
4770	<i>of Explanations (And Other Determination Relations)</i> . . . . .	459
4771	MAŞUK ŞİMŞEK, <i>Determination Relations and Metaphysical Explanations</i> . . .	505
4772	YANNIC KAPPES, <i>Grounding Ground and the (In-)Escapable Ill-Foundedness</i>	
4773	<i>of the Inclusive 'Explains'</i> . . . . .	521

PROOF